



WYNOLD D. DETERICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

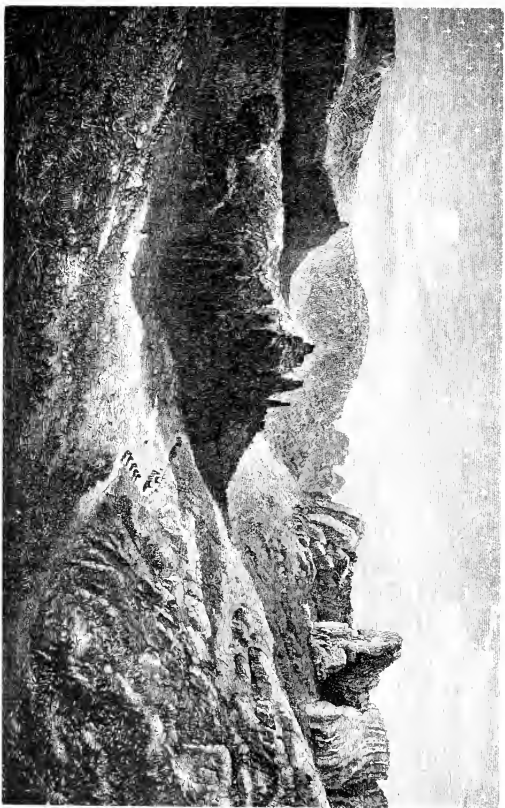


ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01115 1435





Steau's Pass by Moonlight in 1868.

HISTORY
OF
ARIZONA

BY
THOMAS EDWIN FARISH,
ARIZONA HISTORIAN

VOLUME V

PHOENIX, ARIZONA
1918

COPYRIGHTED 1918,
BY
THOS. EDWIN FARISH,
ARIZONA HISTORIAN

THE FILMER BROTHERS ELECTROTYPE COMPANY
TYPOGRAPHERS AND STEREOTYPERS
SAN FRANCISCO

1714348

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

STEAN'S PASS BY MOONLIGHT.....	Frontispiece
JOHN A. RUSH.....	Facing Page 31
PHILIP DRACHMAN	Facing Page 32
APACHE PASS FROM FORT BOWIE.....	Facing Page 102
FIRST GRANITE GORGE, GRAND CANYON.....	Facing Page 122
JAMES WHITE.....	Facing Page 144
MAJ. J. W. POWELL.....	Facing Page 169
CHAS. A. SHIBELL.....	Facing Page 318

CONTENTS.

VOLUME V.

CHAPTER I.

THE FOURTH LEGISLATURE.

PAGE

Members of—Message of Governor McCormick—Report of Territorial Auditor—Memorials to Congress—Laws Passed by Legislature—Capital Located at Tucson—McCormick Elected Delegate to Congress—Boards of Supervisors Authorized to Create School District—Edward J. Cook, Biography—John A. Rush, Biography—Philip Drachman, Biography	1
--	---

CHAPTER II.

THE FIFTH LEGISLATURE.

Convening of — Governor's Message — Memorials — Resolutions—Death of Henry Jenkins—Murder of A. M. Erwin by Indians—Treasurer's Estimate of Expenses—Contention Between Arizona and California as to Boundary Line—Appointments by Governor—Report of Territorial Auditor—Report of Territorial Treasurer—Indebtedness of Territory.....	33
--	----

CHAPTER III.

THE FIFTH LEGISLATURE (Continued).

Acts Passed by—Dancing Licensed—Act to Establish Public Schools—Text of—Act Locating Territorial Prison at or Near Phoenix	63
--	----

CHAPTER IV.

WHAT CONGRESS DID FOR ARIZONA.

Collection District Proposed—Improvements on Colorado River Indian Reservation—Speech of Delegate Bashford Upon—Debate Upon—Amendment to Postal Bill—Delegate Bashford's Speech Upon—Acts of Third, Fourth and Fifth Legislatures Legalized—Sixth Legislature Held at Tucson	88
--	----

CHAPTER V.

EXPLORATIONS AND SURVEYS.

PAGE

Kansas Pacific Railway's Expedition for Southern Railway to Pacific Coast—Story of by William A. Bell—Fort Bowie—Murders by and Adventures with the Indians.....	100
--	-----

CHAPTER VI.

EXPLORATIONS AND SURVEYS (Continued).

Passage Through Grand Canyon of James White, Prospector—Personnel of Prospecting Party—Attacked by Indians—Part of Party Killed—Making of Raft by White and One Companion—Voyage Through Canyon—White's Companion Drowned—White Continues Alone—Experience With Indians—Arrival at Callville.....	122
---	-----

CHAPTER VII.

EXPLORATIONS AND SURVEYS (Continued).

Story of White's Trip Made Official U. S. Senate Document—Article by Thomas F. Dawson—Statement in Rocky Mountain Herald—White's Own Statement—Corroborative Evidence—White's After Life	144
--	-----

CHAPTER VIII.

EXPLORATIONS AND SURVEYS (Continued).

Major Powell's First Exploration of the Grand Canyon—Cataract Canyon—Description of Walls of Canyon—Three of Party Leave and Go Overland—End of First Exploration—Mormons—Approximate Distance by River—Major Powell's Second Exploration of the Grand Canyon—White's Story Branded Fabrication by Dellenbaugh.....	169
---	-----

CHAPTER IX.

THE MILITARY.

General Mason's Report—Different Indian Tribes—Forts in Arizona—General McDowell's Report—Praise for Arizona Volunteers—Expeditions Against Indians—Conditions in Arizona by Major-General Halleck	183
--	-----

CHAPTER X.

THE MILITARY (Continued).

Report of Colonel Jones, Inspector—Remoteness of Arizona Bar to Frequent Inspections—Recommends Separate Military District for Arizona and Concentration of Troops—Also Recommends More and Better Buildings—General McDowell's Remarks on Colonel Jones' Report—Statement of Conditions	206
--	-----

CHAPTER XI.

THE MILITARY (Continued).

PAGE

General Orders as to Location of Troops in Arizona—Remarks of General McDowell—Easy Times for Government Contractors—General Gregg Orders That All Indians Off Reservations be Treated as Hostiles—Interference With Order by Indian Agent Dent—General Gregg's Order Countermanded by General McDowell—General McDowell Criticised by Governor McCormick—General McDowell's Second Annual Report—Reports Expeditions Against the Indians	236
---	-----

CHAPTER XII.

THE MILITARY (Continued).

Major-General Halleck's Report for 1867-68—Describes Conditions in Arizona—Urges That More Troops be Sent to Arizona—Expeditions Against Hostile Indians—Frequent Desertions of Soldiers—Report of Brigadier-General Thomas E. Devin of Expedition Against the Hostiles....	261
---	-----

CHAPTER XIII.

INDIAN TROUBLES.

Attack on T. Lambertson—Killing of Henry Twaddle—Killing of Gonzales—Attack on LeRoy Jay and William Trehan—Fight With Frenchmen on Hassayampa—Attacks in and Around Wickenburg—Jackass Smith—Expedition of Lieut. Cradlebaugh Against Indians—Jackson McCracken's Plight—Killing of George Bowers—Experience of "Jeff" Davis—Orick Jackson Describes Conditions—Thomas Thompson Hunter's Description of Conditions—Hostilities at Fort Bowie—Killing of Commander of Post—Murder of Col. Stone and Escort—Duel Between Keeper of Station and One of Cochise's Band—Murder of Mail Carrier Fisher—Attack on W. A. Smith and Companions—Depredations Around Tucson—Camp Grant Massacre—Mrs. Stephen's Fight With Indians—"Miner" Editorial on Situation—W. M. Saxton Killed	279
--	-----

CHAPTER XIV.

INDIAN TROUBLES (Continued).

Indian Question not Solved—General Mason Succeeded by Colonel Wallen and Colonel Lovell—General Gregg and General Crittenden Succeed Colonels Wallen and Lovell—Arizona Declared Military District by General Halleck—General McDowell Makes Visit to Arizona—Raids and Massacres Continue—Expedition by General Gregg—At-
--

	PAGE
tack on Miller's Ranch—Bravery of Mrs. Miller—A. M. Erwin, Member of Legislature, Killed by Indians—General Ord Succeeds General McDowell—Charles Spencer and Party Attacked by Indians—Expedition by General Alexander—La Paz Threatened by Indians—Attack Upon Joseph Melvin and J. P. Gibson—Josiah Whitecomb and Party Attacked by Indians—George D. Bowers and Party Attacked, Bowers Killed—Begole and Thompson Attacked, Thompson Killed—Fight at Burnt Ranch—Jake Miller Kills Indian Chief and Saves Ranch and Stock—E. A. Bentley, Editor and Proprietor of "Miner" Killed by Indians—Murders and Raids in Southern Part of Arizona Detailed by Charles A. Shibell—Sol Barth's Experience With Cochise	297

CHAPTER XV.

PROGRESS OF THE TERRITORY.

Building Boom in Tucson—Leading Merchants—Indian Raids—A. J. Doran's Experience With Pah-Utes—Loyalty of Indians—Biography of J. W. Sullivan—His Early Experiences in the Territory—Biography of John H. Marion.....	327
--	-----

HISTORY OF ARIZONA.
VOLUME V.

.

HISTORY OF ARIZONA.

CHAPTER I.

THE FOURTH LEGISLATURE.

MEMBERS OF—MESSAGE OF GOVERNOR McCORMICK—REPORT OF TERRITORIAL AUDITOR—MEMORIALS TO CONGRESS—LAWS PASSED BY LEGISLATURE—CAPITAL LOCATED AT TUCSON—McCORMICK ELECTED DELEGATE TO CONGRESS—BOARDS OF SUPERVISORS AUTHORIZED TO CREATE SCHOOL DISTRICT—EDWARD J. COOK, BIOGRAPHY—JOHN A. RUSH, BIOGRAPHY—PHILIP DRACHMAN, BIOGRAPHY.

The Fourth Territorial Legislative Assembly convened at Prescott on the 4th day of September, and ended on the 7th day of October, 1867. The following were the members of the Council and the House of Representatives:

COUNCIL.

Name,	Residence.	Occupation.	Age.	Where Born.
(Yavapai County)				
John W. Simmons,	Prescott,	Farmer,	56	Tennessee.
Daniel S. Lount,	Agua Caliente,	Miner,	47	Canada West.
Lewis A. Stevens,	Prescott,	Farmer,	52	Mississippi.
(Mohave County)				
William H. Hardy,	Hardyville,	Merchant,	45	New York.
(Pah-Ute County)				
Octavius D. Gass,	Callville,	Ranchoero.,	39	Ohio.
(Yuma County)				
Alexander McKey,	La Paz,	Miner,	40	Kentucky.
(Pima County)				
Daniel H. Stickney,	Tucson,	Merchant,	55	Massachusetts.
Mortimer R. Platt,	Tucson,	Lawyer,	31	New York.
Henry Jenkins,	Tubac,	Lawyer,	55	New York.

HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES.

Name.	Residence.	Occupation.	Age.	Where Born.
(Yavapai County)				
James S. Giles,	Prescott,	Farmer,	31	Delaware.
John A. Rush,	Prescott,	Lawyer,	48	Missouri.
John H. Matthews,	Kirkland Valley,	Farmer,	47	Alabama.
Edward J. Cook,	Prescott,	Merchant,	42	Alabama.
Andrew Cullumber,	Walnut Grove,	Farmer,	52	Ohio.
John T. Dare,	Prescott,	Printer,	26	New York.
(Mohave County)				
Nathaniel S. Lewis,	Hardyville,	Miner,	37	Indiana.
(Pah-Ute County)				
Royal J. Cutler,	St. Joseph,	Farmer,	39	New York.
(Yuma County)				
Oliver Lindsey,	La Paz,	Farmer,	32	New York.
G. W. Hanford,	Eureka,	Miner,		New York.
John Henion,	Williams Fork,	Miner,		
(Pima County)				
Charles W. Lewis,	Tubac,	Farmer,	40	Virginia.
John B. Allen,	Tucson,	Merchant,	49	Maine.
Marvin M. Richardson,	Tubac,	Merchant,	41	New York.
Underwood C. Barnett,	Tucson,	Farmer,	35	Arkansas.
Francis M. Hodges,	Tucson,	Merchant,	29	Missouri.
Solomon W. Chambers,	Calabazas,	Farmer,	45	Ohio.
Philip Drachman,	Tucson,	Merchant,	37	Poland.

All the members of the Council attended, but G. W. Hanford and John Henion, elected from Yuma County as Representatives, failed to put in an appearance.

The Legislature organized by the election of Octavius D. Gass, of Pah-Ute County, as President, and Almon Gage, as Secretary of the Council, and Oliver Lindsey, of Yuma County, as Speaker, and Follett G. Christie as Chief Clerk of the House.

In his message to the Legislature Governor McCormick called attention to the fact that the Wallapais, the Pah-Utes, and a portion of the Yavapais were on the warpath, and that it was necessary that additional forces should be sent to the Territory. He also urged a separate mili-

tary department for the Territory. In this connection he said:

“The system of small, temporary posts, by which at least one-half the troops in the Territory are now rendered unavailable, will doubtless be set aside; a few forts will be established at points chosen by those familiar with the districts, from actual observation, from which troops can be hurled in force against any part of the Indian country and kept there until the end sought is fully attained; co-operative movements will be made from various parts of the Territory; raiding parties will be promptly followed to their retreats however remote, and the service instead of being so generally irksome and profitless as to provoke even good soldiers to desertion, will have the fascination which always attends formidable and successful military movements.

“It has lately been alleged abroad that Arizona is a vortex into which the greater portion of the available military material upon the Pacific Coast disappears. Taking into consideration the vast extent of the country, and the agility of the hostile Indians, the number of troops now here is comparatively small, amounting in the district of Prescott, to less than one man to one hundred square miles. If the Territory is in any sense a vortex it has been made so through the unfortunate system to which I have referred, and against a continuation of which economy and reason most earnestly protest. Yet with the greatly increased efficiency of the troops already here, which must come should the Territory be made a distinct Department, some

addition to the force will be required in order to secure the early attainment of peace, and, in accordance with the popular wish, I have lately made a vigorous appeal to the Department commander for more regulars, and also renewed my application to the War Department (based upon the memorial of the Second Assembly), for authority to raise a regiment of Territorial volunteers to serve for the term of two years.

“An Act of Congress adopted at the late special session (in July) provides a commission to select permanent reservations for all the Indian tribes now occupying the Territories east of the Rocky Mountains, and if said Indians fail to remove to the reservations the Secretary of War is authorized to accept the services of mounted volunteers from the Governors of the several States and Territories, not exceeding four thousand men in number; and for such term of service as in his judgment may be necessary for the suppression of Indian hostilities.

“I do not understand that this law is applicable to Arizona, although our necessity is, and I venture to say will be much greater than that of any of the Territories east of the Rocky Mountains; and I think it will not be difficult under a proper representation of facts by you (through our Delegate in Congress) to have its provisions for our benefit. I will not here enter into an argument to establish the advantage of securing a native regiment, but be content with the assertion that while highly appreciating the efficiency of the regulars in the battles named, and giving them all deserved credit, I am still of the opinion that no troops can begin

to cope with the Apaches and other hostile Indians of this Territory in their mountain fastnesses so successfully and at so little cost as the volunteers.

“That the General Government will listen to our reasonable and necessary appeal for a separate Department, and for more troops, I most sincerely hope; for with affairs as they now exist here and have existed since the Territory came under the American flag, ‘patience has ceased to be a virtue.’ It will be alike unjust to the people who have come here expecting protection, to the thousands eager to settle here, to the officers sent here to establish civil law and order, and highly discreditable to a government more able than ever before to give security for life and property to all its citizens, if relief is not speedily granted.

“While the war in the East continued it was not to be expected that much attention would be given to the frontier, but now there would seem to be no excuse for neglect to overcome the one great barrier to our prosperity, unless, as it is sometimes asserted, the Government does not deem the country worthy of occupation and development. Those who are familiar with its rare mineral resources, its rich fertile valleys, its unrivalled pastoral lands, its equable and salutary climate, its genial skies, and all its capabilities and possibilities, taken as a whole (notwithstanding its large extent of desert and mountain), consider the assertion absurd. Arizona will compare favorably in all respects with any of the mineral-bearing Territories of the Union, while in climate it possesses a decided

advantage over all. To those who have here found homes and health, who are endeared to the country by years of sacrifice and by friendships here formed, whose beloved dead here 'sleep the sleep that knows no waking,' the hostility of a few thousands of abject wild men, but a single remove from the brute creation, who should not be allowed to stay the march of civilization for a day, and who if properly dealt with would melt before the strong arm of the Government like snow beneath the noonday sun, is alike repulsive and intolerable.

"Whatever the conclusions of Congressional committees, or of special commissioners, after hurried and superficial visits to the plains, or the theories of well meaning philanthropists, to those who have lived among the Indians, who have dealt with them, who know their innate treachery, who are familiar with their barbarous deeds, who comprehend their low nature and instincts, it is folly to talk of expecting good results from a persuasive policy. The Indian of to-day, whatever he may have been in the past, is not to be bound by treaties, annuities, or by favor of any kind unless first made clearly to understand that the white man is his master, and intends to be such for all time. For this reason it is idle, as I have already asserted, 'to talk to the Apache (or to any hostile Indian), of reservations, while he feels any security for life or property outside of them.' Yet at the same time, so far from urging extermination which is supposed by many to be the war cry of all Arizonians, I have favored reservations, provided the Indians placed upon them can and will

be kept there. To allow them to go and come at will is to subsist and equip them for robbery and murder. This has been clearly and sadly demonstrated. A system of reservations is needed here quite as much as in the Eastern territories. 'One Indian,' as a competent writer upon Indian affairs asserts, 'requires for his maintenance, by his methods of living, as much territory as will support a thousand men who live by civilized methods, and when by the natural flow of population, the thousand civilized men require for their homes the place roamed over by one Indian, it is justice to all men that he should give way.'

"He must do so, and his only security is upon a reservation, where, as his highest motive is to get something to eat without labor, he will be well accommodated, and in time may be taught habits of industry, although the task will be a difficult one. Excepting those long since provided in this Territory for such really friendly tribes as the Pimas and Maricopas, there is but one reservation, that at Half Way Bend upon the Colorado River above the town of La Paz, for the proper preparation of which, for the reception of such of the river and other Indians disposed to peace as now have no fixed homes, an appropriation of fifty thousand dollars has been made by Congress and is now being expended by the Indian Superintendent, who also has an appropriation this year of seventy thousand dollars for the general care of the friendly Indians throughout the Territory. While the reservation upon the Colorado will probably be sufficient for the river Indians and those who

may be forced upon it from the country between the Colorado and the Verde, there should in my judgment, be an extensive reservation provided somewhere in the eastern portion of the Territory, perhaps upon the upper Gila, for such of the Apaches as may sue for peace. At each reservation there should be a sufficient strength of troops to make escape on the part of the Indians an utter impossibility, and trade and intercourse by the whites, if allowed at all, should be guarded by regulations calculated to prevent fraud and demoralization."

In regard to mines and mining, Governor McCormick said:

"The appearance of sulphurets in many of the lodes opened in Central Arizona necessitates the provision of new machinery for the reduction and separation of the ores, and until this can be supplied most of our quartz mills will be idle. Parties who have made tests of the sulphurates, upon a small scale, pronounce them exceedingly rich and have no doubt they can be worked in large quantities to great advantage." He also said:

"Operations upon the copper mines at Williams' Fork, which have been generally suspended during the summer owing to the remarkably low price of copper and for other reasons, will, I am informed, be renewed upon a large scale during the present fall and ensuing winter.

"In Southern Arizona the Indian disturbances and other causes, as here, have to a great degree interrupted operations in the mines, but their owners have not lost confidence in their

wealth, and are eager to proceed in their development at the earliest practicable moment.

“The proposed opening of the port of Libertad, in Sonora, will, it is believed, render the shipping of copper ore from Southern Arizona a profitable enterprise, and otherwise prove a source of great advantage to the people of that part of the Territory who cherish a lively hope that the government, having extended its lines upon the north, will take measures to acquire a portion of Sonora, at least sufficient to bring the ports of Libertad and Guaymas under the American flag; an acquisition of territory likely to prove far more profitable to the Union than that recently secured, and absolutely essential to the proper development of a large and important part of Arizona.”

The Governor made the following reference to agriculture in the Territory:

“In the face of all the annoyances from the Indians experienced during the present season by our ranchmen, they have, with few exceptions, the promise of large and excellent crops. It is found that the land improves by cultivation, and that the soil in most of the valleys is of the richest character. Indian corn grows luxuriantly, and it is estimated that more will be produced in this military district this year than will be required for the use of the troops and the citizens. Contracts to supply the Government have lately been let at prices less than those paid but a year since for the transportation of grain from California.

“The fine farming valleys below the Gila are more productive than ever before, and it is

clearly shown that not only corn and small grain, but fruits and vegetables of all kinds, will thrive in many parts of the Territory—while in several localities, cotton and tobacco have been raised with much success. Although disconnected and generally in small parcels, the agricultural lands of the Territory, in the aggregate, amount to a large area, unusually large and fertile for what is commonly called a desert country.

“Their general cultivation, and the use of the extensive grazing lands, (abounding in grasses, nutritious at all seasons,) which is only delayed by the insecurity of life and property, must, whenever practicable, so reduce the cost of living here as to make the Territory one of the most attractive upon the Pacific slope, and greatly facilitate all business pursuits.

“It has been well said, ‘He who cultivates the land the best is likely to defend it the best,’ and I look upon the care and enthusiasm with which our farmers follow their honorable and useful calling, (one of vital importance in connection with mining,) in constant risk and exposure, as the most hopeful feature in the present state of the Territory.”

The Governor stated that there had been a very marked and gratifying improvement in the mail service in the Territory since the adjournment of the last Legislature; that service between San Bernardino and Prescott, and between Salt Lake and Callville and Arizona City had been increased to a semi-weekly service; that the Overland, from the Rio Grande to the Pacific, via Tucson, had been re-established, and

weekly service given, which was to be increased to three services a week in coaches, which, as the Governor said, "will afford the people of Southern Arizona a great accommodation, and prove advantageous to the whole Territory." He recommended also an increase in the mail service to other points.

In reference to the public schools, he said:

"In the opinion of many of the people the time has come for some definite and liberal provision for the establishment and maintenance of public schools in the Territory. In the larger settlements there are numerous children, and the thought of permitting them to grow up in ignorance is not to be tolerated, while to sustain private schools is an expense which in most cases the parents cannot afford. Section 11, Chapter XXIII, of the Code of the Territory provides as follows:

"Sec. 11. As soon as there shall have accumulated sufficient funds, and a necessity exists therefor, the Legislature shall provide for a system of common school education, at the public expense, and may at any time authorize a tax to be levied by school districts for the support of schools, until such system of common school education shall be established."

"The First Assembly, by Act approved November 7th, 1864, appropriated a small sum for public schools in the towns of Prescott, Tucson, La Paz, and Mohave City, to be void and of no effect unless said towns, by taxation, appropriation or individual enterprise, in each case furnished a like sum of money.

“If I am correctly informed none of the towns have complied with this requirement, and the funds of the Territory have not been used. The sums, however, are insufficient to be of more than temporary benefit and sufficient funds have not yet accumulated, as required by the section of the Code referred to, to support a system of common school education, yet I think the popular sentiment will heartily sustain you in providing such a system and in authorizing the counties to levy a reasonable special tax for its support, according to the judgment of their Supervisors.”

Speaking of the courts, the Governor said:

“Civil law and order reign throughout the Territory to a gratifying degree. The Courts are all well organized, and criminals are promptly arrested and punished, although here, as everywhere upon the frontier there are those who forget that ‘liberty consists in the power of doing that which is permitted by the law,’ who justify personal redress for wrongs and allow sympathy rather than evidence to control their judgment. This class is not large, however, and will diminish with every year as our population increases, and the importance of maintaining the dignity of the law under all circumstances is better understood.

“In Yavapai County a substantial jail is in process of construction, and steps have been taken for the erection of similar buildings in other counties, but as it will be some time before they are fitted for use, it has been suggested to me, and I give you the suggestion, that it will be wise for your honorable bodies to enact

a law authorizing the Sheriffs of the respective counties to employ or cause to be employed, all able bodied male prisoners as laborers upon the roads, or in such public works as may be most required. This is the custom in many States and Territories, even where the jail accommodations are ample, and it has been found to conduce both to the health of the prisoners and to the accomplishment of much useful labor."

He called the attention of the Legislature to an Act of Congress, approved January 22, 1867, appropriating the net proceeds of the Internal Revenue for the year 1866, and up to 1868, inclusive, for the purpose of erecting under the direction of the Secretary of the Interior, penitentiary buildings at such places as should be designated by the Legislatures of the Territories, and approved by the Secretary of the Interior. The sum appropriated for use in Arizona was limited to the sum of forty thousand dollars. The Governor recommended that the site should be selected at this session of the Legislature and that work should begin on the Territorial Prison.

The Governor further reported that two of the most important federal offices in the Territory were unoccupied much of the time because of the wholly inadequate compensation allowed their incumbents by Congress, the offices being those of Marshal and District Attorney and suggested that the Legislature should petition Congress to make the salaries of such offices such that their occupants could hold them without personal sacrifice, and give the proper time and attention to the important duties required.

In reference to the finances of the Territory, he stated that the total Territorial indebtedness amounted to twenty-eight thousand, three hundred and seventy-five dollars (\$28,375) in national currency; that nine thousand dollars of the gold bonds issued under the authority of the First Legislature, would become due during the ensuing year and that provision should be made for their payment.

The report of the Territorial Auditor was submitted to the Legislature, and is as follows:

“Prescott, September 7th, 1867.

“To the Honorable the Fourth Legislative Assembly:

“In accordance with the provisions of Chapter 20, Howell Code, I respectfully submit my report of the accounts audited, and of the warrants issued by me, in payment of said accounts, since November, 1866, to the present date.

“I have, since the first day of November, 1866, audited the claims as per list appended hereto, amounting in all, to three thousand and ninety-three dollars and one cent, (\$3,093.01) for which I have issued warrants on the general fund.

“The Territorial Treasurer, on the 2d of August, rendered me a statement of the money and other Territorial securities received by him in payment for taxes, and of the disbursements made by him from the date of his last settlement with the Board of Territorial Commissioners, a copy of which I hereto append.

“Sec. V of the Act to provide for the expense of Arizona Territory, approved October 30th,

1866, authorizes the Sheriff or Collector, to receive warrants drawn by the Auditor, in payment of taxes, fines, etc., due the Territory at par, and that such shall be received by the Treasurer in settlement with the Sheriff or Collector.

“I respectfully suggest as an act of justice to all parties, that Sec. V. of the above act be repealed and an act passed that warrants be paid by the Territorial Treasurer only, and in the order in which they are drawn by the Auditor.

“I am, with much respect,

“Your Obedient Servant,

“JAMES GRANT, Auditor.”

Congress was memorialized to allow the Governor of the Territory to raise a regiment of volunteer troops; to increase the jurisdiction of Justices of the Peace from one hundred to three hundred dollars; to allow duties to be paid in currency instead of in gold, alleging that it cost from five to ten per cent to bring in gold from California according to the distance; protesting against the annexation of any portion of Arizona to the State of Nevada, and also memorializing the Secretary of the Treasury as follows:

“To the Hon. Hugh McCulloch, Secretary of the Treasury:

“Sir:—Your memorialists, the Legislative Assembly of the Territory of Arizona, respectfully represent that the sums enumerated below have been assumed by the Territory of Arizona as shown by the accounts of the Territorial Treasurer:

“To William T. Howell for preparing a Code of laws for the Terri- tory	\$2,500.00
“E. A. Bentley for printing said Code	2,994.75
“William T. Howell for reading proof of said Code.....	250.00
“T. A. Hand for printing Gov- ernor’s Message, journals, rules, &c., of First Legis- lature	1,121.00
“E. A. Bentley for printing Code and Acts of the Territory in the Arizona Miner news- paper	\$1,747.00
“R. C. McCormick for amount paid for enrolling bills passed by the First Legislature.....	850.62
“R. C. McCormick for amount paid P. H. Dunne for com- position, press work, paper and binding Governor’s mes- sage (1864) and compendium of laws of the First Legis- lative Assembly in Spanish..	950.00

“Making a total of:.....\$10,413.37

“Ten thousand four hundred and thirteen 37/100 dollars, all of which your memorialists believe should, under the provisions of the Organic Act, and according to the custom of the Government in regard to other Territories, be paid out of the United States Treasury.

“Your memorialists further represent that the population of the Territory is so small, that

the Territory is now in debt with increasing expenses, that in no year since the organization of the Territory has the appropriation allowed by Congress been consumed, and that they therefore most respectfully and confidently ask that the amount of ten thousand four hundred and thirteen and $37/100$ dollars be allowed the Territory of Arizona from the United States Treasury for the payment of the accounts aforesaid, Therefore:

“Resolved, that the Secretary of the Territory, the Hon. J. P. T. Carter, is hereby requested to transmit a copy of this memorial to the Hon. Hugh McCulloch, Secretary of the Treasury, and to use all honorable means in his power to have the amount aforesaid, allowed the Territory of Arizona.

“Approved October 5, 1867.”

This Legislature also memorialized Congress for an increase in pay of the members and officers of the Legislative Assembly, asking an increase from three to six dollars for the per diem of the legislators; for an appropriation for the construction of military roads, and wells upon the same, and that the Quartermasters at the several military posts in the Territory, be authorized to purchase supplies in the open market.

Among the concurrent resolutions was one as follows:

“Whereas, the people of the United States, and particularly those of the frontier territories, occupied by hostile Indians, have been given an implied, if not an expressed, assur-

ance by the Government that the army should protect them, and their property, while struggling against the difficulties and dangers, and enduring the privations incident to the settlement and development of new countries; and whenever an officer of any rank in the military service fails to carry out whatever is necessary to this object, either from inability to comprehend the situation, from mistaken sympathy with the savage, from a disposition to arbitrary use of power, from a lack of definite policy, or from any motive or for any cause whatever, it is then the right of the people to petition for relief, and it is therefore

“Resolved, by the House of Representatives, the Council concurring, that we do earnestly request that the Territory of Arizona be removed from under the command of the present Department Commander, Brevet Major General Irwin McDowell, and made into a separate Department, with the commanding officer residing within its limits, and reporting directly to Major General Halleck, commanding the Division of the Pacific.

“Resolved, that in our present District Commanders, Generals Gregg and Crittenden, Colonels Lovell, Sanford and Price, and their subordinates, we recognize officers of ability, energy and the right disposition, whose combined movements against the hostile Indians will speedily rid us of the incubus which clogs and paralyzes every enterprise here, if they are directed by a competent commander upon the ground, familiar with the movements of the Indians, and prompt to take advantage of the

same, as well as to see that the troops are properly supplied, the posts advantageously located, and to secure such additional force as may from time to time be required.

“Resolved, that the Secretary of the Territory is hereby requested to forward a copy of these resolutions, with a copy of the message of the Governor, to the Secretary of War, to Generals Grant, Halleck and McDowell, to our Delegate in Congress, and to each of the Senators and Members of Congress from the Pacific Coast.”

This resolution was probably the outgrowth of a misunderstanding, or, rather, quarrel, between the Executive and General McDowell, which will be treated of further as this history progresses.

There was some opposition to this resolution, coming principally from Yavapai members, who, no doubt, had no very kindly feeling toward the Governor on account of the part he had taken in removing the capital to Tucson, for at that time, in Arizona particularly, prosperity followed the flag that waved over the capital. Here contracts were made by the Government, and nice fat contracts handed around to the faithful. Along these lines, to show the feeling against the Governor, I copy the following report of the select committee concerning the financial condition of the Territory, of which Mr. Giles of Yavapai was chairman. This report is found upon page 101 of the Journal of the Fourth Legislative Assembly, and is as follows:

“Your committee to whom was referred the subject matter contained in the resolution passed by the House on the 12th inst., appointing a select committee of five to examine into the financial affairs of the Territory. To ascertain the total indebtedness of the Territory—what bonds or other evidences of indebtedness have been issued from the organization of the Territory up to the present time, for what purpose, and by what authority, etc., beg leave to report that they have performed the duty assigned them and find the total indebtedness of the Territory to be twenty-eight thousand, three hundred and seventy-five dollars in currency. Your committee find that gold bonds to the amount of fifteen thousand dollars, bearing interest at the rate of ten per cent per annum, payable in three years from date of issuance, principal and interest payable in gold coin, have been issued by the Territorial Treasurer in liquidation of warrants drawn upon him by the Territorial Auditors, and that there are now outstanding warrants covering the balance of the Territorial indebtedness.

“Your committee find on examination that Territorial warrants, drawn on the Territorial Treasurer to the amount of six thousand four hundred and ninety-seven nineteen one-hundredths (\$6,497.19) dollars, have been issued to Coles Bashford as Attorney-General of the Territory; and that the following Territorial gold bonds bearing interest, the interest payable annually, has been paid to said Coles Bashford as Attorney-General as salary and traveling

expenses in part satisfaction of said warrants, to-wit: Bonds number 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96. The interest on which has been paid to August 15, 1867.

“Also bonds numbers 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134. The interest on which has been paid to August 15, 1866. Also bonds numbers 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150. The interest on which has been paid to August 15th, 1867. Amounting in the aggregate to three thousand one hundred and fifty dollars, and the said Coles Bashford now holds, if he has not transferred the same, warrants numbers 31, 42, 51, 52, 55, 105, 106, amounting to three thousand three hundred and forty seven nineteen one-hundredths dollars (3,347.19). Your Committee find that Coles Bashford was first appointed Attorney-General for the Territory by Governor Goodwin on February 1st, 1864, and for said appointment your committee are unable to find any law. The Organic Act nowhere furnishes the authority, and if done under Chapter sixteen of the laws of New Mexico, creating the office of Attorney-General, approved February 2, 1859, your committee believe it was illegal, for that act was amended by an act passed by the Legislature of said Territory, approved February 28th, 1862, and by an act passed by said Legislature approved January 28th, 1863. Thereby circumscribing the duties of Attorney-General for the Territory of New Mexico, by making said officer District

Attorney for the First Judicial District of said Territory, and ex officio Attorney-General for the Territory, reducing his salary from fifteen hundred to six hundred dollars. Under this illegal appointment, as your committee believe, Coles Bashford acted as Attorney-General until Nov. 10th, 1864. And for said services was allowed and paid in bonds of the Territory, the sum of one thousand one hundred and sixty-six dollars. On November 10th, 1864, an act of the Territorial Legislature creating the offices of Attorney-General and fixing his salary, was approved, and the said Coles Bashford was continued or reappointed Attorney-General, which appointment was a plain violation of that part of the Organic Act which says that 'no member of the Legislative Assembly shall hold or be appointed to any office which shall have been created, or the salary or emoluments of which shall have been increased while he was a member during the term for which he was elected and for one year after the expiration of such term.'

"The said Coles Bashford being at that time a member of the Legislature, elected for two years. And your committee find that the said Coles Bashford held said office of Attorney-General from November 10th, 1864, to December 31st, 1866; and your committee believe illegally. And that from time to time Territorial warrants on the Territorial Treasurer were issued to the said Coles Bashford as Attorney-General, from the said 10th day of November, 1864, to December 31st, 1866, amounting to four thousand eight hundred and

forty-seven nineteen one-hundredths (\$4,847.-19) dollars, which amount, (if not transferred), he now holds against the Territory in the shape of bonds and Territorial warrants.

“Your committee also find that the Third Legislature by an act, approved Oct. 30th, 1866, abolished the office of Attorney-General. And that from December 1st, 1866, under an act of the Third Legislature, approved October 27th, 1866, the District Attorney for the county of Yavapai has been paid for services as Attorney-General.

“Your committee believe that the appointment of Coles Bashford as Attorney-General was in violation of law, and that his claims for services as such, were illegal, and should not have been allowed by the board of Territorial Auditors. And we, your committee, recommend that you take such steps as are necessary to stop the payment of said bonds and warrants issued to pay said Coles Bashford for services as Attorney-General.

“Your committee also find that under Chapter twenty-one of the Howell Code, the Governor of the Territory is authorized to appoint an Adjutant-General, and that his compensation shall be whatever amount the Territorial Auditors shall allow. Under said law we find that one W. T. Flower was appointed Adjutant-General, and for services which your committee could not see, was paid a warrant for the sum of three hundred and twelve dollars and fifty cents.

“Flower was removed or resigned, and one W. H. Garvin was appointed, and has held the

position of Adjutant-General up to the present time, and continues still to hold it, drawing at stated times his regular warrants; and to him have been issued warrants to the amount of one thousand three hundred and two dollars and thirty-two cents.

“During a part of the years 1865 and 1866, we find that the said Adjutant-General did perform some services, as the Territory had during that time some troops in the field, and your committee can understand why warrants were issued to him during that time. But your committee cannot understand why he should be paid when no services were rendered. Your committee find that within the past year, when the Territory had no troops, when no militia is organized, that warrants to the amount of six hundred and fifty-five dollars have been issued to the said W. H. Garvin, as Adjutant-General for the Territory, as salary and office expense. But as it has been allowed in accordance with law, we suppose it must be paid.

“Your committee, however, recommend that a law be passed repealing that section of Chapter XXI of the Howell Code, authorizing the Territorial Auditor to allow such claims in the future.

“Your committee find that a warrant for two thousand nine hundred and ninety-four dollars and seventy-five cents was issued to E. A. Bentley for printing the Howell Code; that a warrant for two thousand five hundred dollars was issued to W. T. Howell, Commissioner, to prepare the Howell Code, and that a warrant for two hundred and fifty dollars was issued to the same

W. T. Howell for reading proof of the Howell Code; that a warrant for one thousand seven hundred and forty-seven dollars was issued to E. A. Bentley for printing laws of the Territory in the Arizona Miner; that a warrant for one thousand one hundred and twenty-one dollars was issued to T. A. Hand for printing Governor's Message, Journals of the First Legislature and the Rules of the House and Council of the First Legislature; that a warrant for eight hundred and fifty dollars and sixty-two cents was issued to R. C. McCormick for amount paid by him for enrolling bills passed by the First Legislature—amounting in the aggregate to the sum of nine thousand four hundred and sixty-three and $37/100$ dollars, which your committee believe were improperly charged against the Territory, and feel assured would be refunded to the Territory if the proper representations were made at Washington. Your committee therefore recommend that you take such steps as are necessary to get the matter before the Treasurer of the United States.

“Your committee also find that warrants were issued to A. M. White, T. Hodges, P. McCannon, and R. C. McCormick, amounting to the sum of one thousand four hundred and ninety-one dollars, for expenses incurred in Col. K. S. Woolsey's expedition against the hostile Indians. And your committee believe that if the matter was fairly represented to the Congress of the United States, an appropriation would be made for our relief.

“Your committee find that the balance of the outstanding indebtedness of the Territory is for

salaries due the Territorial Auditor and Treasurer, and for printing, interest on bonds and other incidental expenses, amounting to the sum of nine thousand two hundred and eight dollars and sixty-two cents.

“Your committee find that the Governor and Secretary, being officers of the government of the United States, were, by section ten of the Organic Act, which says: ‘No person holding a commission or appointment under the United States, except postmaster, shall be a member of the Legislative Assembly, or shall hold any office under the government of said Territory,’ prohibited from holding the office of Auditor; and that the Attorney-General was also prohibited from acting as Auditor, under the same section, which says that no member of the Legislative Assembly shall hold or be appointed to any office which shall have been created, or the salary or emoluments of which shall have been increased, while he was a member, during the term for which he was elected, and for one year after the expiration of such term. All of which is respectfully submitted.

“JAMES S. GILES,
“Chairman, Select Committee.”

There was introduced at this session of the Legislature for the first time, an act to create Maricopa County, which was defeated in the House by a vote of eight to six.

Among the laws passed by this Legislature was one to prevent the improper use of deadly weapons in the towns and villages of the Territory, which would be considered in our day a queer piece of legislation. It read as follows:

“Section 1. That any person in this Territory, having, carrying, or procuring from another person, any dirk, dirk-knife, bowie knife, pistol, gun, or other deadly weapon, who shall in the presence of two or more persons, draw or exhibit any of said deadly weapons in a rude, angry or threatening manner, not in necessary self defence, or who shall in any manner unlawfully use the same in any fight or quarrel, the person or persons so offending upon conviction thereof in any criminal court in any county of this Territory, shall be fined in any sum not less than one hundred nor more than five hundred dollars or imprisonment in the county jail not less than one nor more than six months, in the discretion of the court; or both such fine and imprisonment, together with the cost of prosecution.

“Section 2. That any person or persons having or carrying any pistol or gun who shall in the public streets or highways discharge the same indiscriminately, thereby disturbing the peace and quiet, and endangering the lives of the inhabitants of any town or neighborhood in this Territory, such person or persons upon conviction thereof before any Justice of the Peace in the county where such offence may be committed shall be fined in any sum not less than ten nor more than fifty dollars and imprisonment in the county jail not less than two nor more than ten days, in the discretion of the Justice of the Peace, together with the cost of prosecution.

“Sec. 3. It shall be the duty of all sheriffs, deputy sheriffs, constables, and all peace officers

and private citizens to see that the provisions of section second of this act are enforced, by informing on all persons violating its provisions, by having them arrested and brought before the proper officer for trial and punishment.

“Sec. 4. It is hereby made the duty of all civil and peace officers in this Territory to be diligent in carrying into effect the provisions of section one of this act, as well also as all grand juries, or grand jurors, to enquire into and make presentment of each and every offence against the provisions of said section one of this act which shall come within their knowledge. And it is also made the duty of all judges in this Territory to give said section one in charge of the grand juries at each term of their respective courts.”

An act was passed permanently locating the capital or seat of government of the Territory of Arizona in Tucson, which was to take effect after the first day of November, 1867. There was a great deal of scandal attending the removal of the capital. The Miner claimed that it was done through fraud, saying, in an editorial under date of November 30th, 1867:

“We are assured upon good authority that improper proceedings to the extent of buying three or four members of the Fourth Legislature, and pledging to Governor McCormick to support him for Congress at that place (Tucson). If this does not come under the head of improper proceedings, we are at loss to know what does.”

While, of course, there is no direct evidence to show that fraud was used in moving the capi-

tal, the fact remains that Pima County gave Governor McCormick a very large vote the next year when he was a candidate for Delegate to Congress, he being elected by the following vote:

County	Republican, R. C. McCormick	Democrat, John A. Rush	Independent, Samuel Adams
Yavapai	202	425	9
Mohave	23	40	9
Yuma	80	300	—
Pima	932	71	14
Total:	1,237	836	32.

The Fourth Legislature also passed an act concerning public schools, which gave to the Board of Supervisors in the several counties the right, whenever there was a village or a settlement with a resident population of not less than one hundred persons, and covering an expanse of country not more than four square miles, to set aside such district for a school district: "when any number of legal voters residing in such district may make application to the Board of Supervisors for the establishment of public schools in such district." Sections 4 and 5 of this act are as follows:

"Sec. 4. The Board of Supervisors shall, upon the receipt of such petition, define the boundaries and limits embracing such territory or tract of land on which such settlement is located, and declare the same a school district, numbering such districts in the order in which the same are created.

"Sec. 5. The Board of Supervisors shall, immediately upon the creation of such district,

levy, in addition to the taxes authorized by law to be levied for county and Territorial purposes, a tax of not more than one-half of one per cent. on the assessed value of all the taxable property within the limits of each district, as shown by the last assessment roll of the County Assessor."

This is the first legislation in Arizona creating School Districts, which has been followed ever since.

There was also an act passed amendatory of Chapter 33, of the Howell Code, "Finances and Taxation," which read as follows:

"Sec. 19. An annual ad valorem tax of fifty cents upon each one hundred dollars value of taxable property is hereby levied and directed to be collected and paid for Territorial purposes upon the assessed value of all property in this Territory not by this act exempt from taxation; and upon the same property the Board of Supervisors of each county is hereby authorized and empowered annually to levy and collect a tax for county expenditures not exceeding one dollar and fifty cents upon each one hundred dollars of the taxable property in such county; and upon the same property the Board of Supervisors of each county is hereby authorized and empowered annually to levy and collect such additional or special taxes as the laws of this Territory may authorize or require them to levy and collect; provided, however, that whenever the Board of Supervisors levy any tax they shall cause such levy to be entered on the record of their proceedings and shall direct their clerk to deliver a certified copy thereof to the Sheriff and Treasurer of the County, each of whom shall



JOHN A. RUSH.

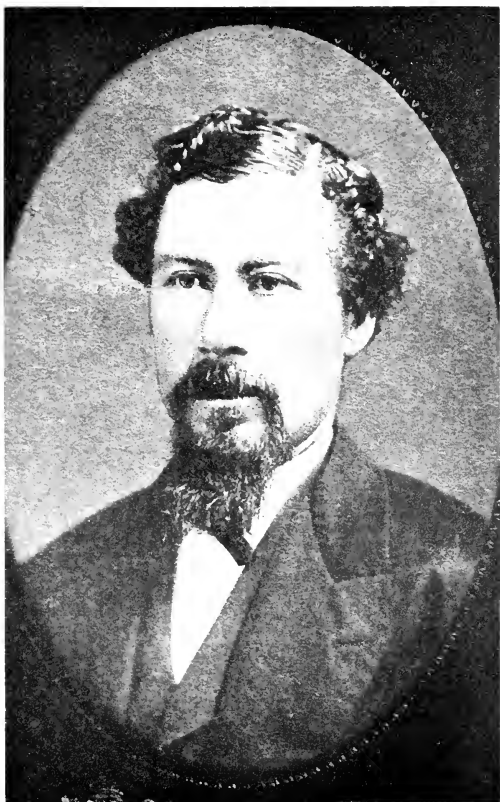
file said copy in his office, and on the first Monday in July in each year the Board of Supervisors shall proceed to estimate and to ascertain the amount of taxes necessary to be assessed upon the taxable property of the county for the year next ensuing not exceeding for all purposes two dollars upon each one hundred dollars of the value of the taxable property, in such county. In such estimate they shall specify the amount to be raised for each particular purpose. If for any cause said Board shall not meet on the day above specified, they may meet for such purpose at any time within ten days thereafter."

Edward J. Cook, one of the members of this Legislature, was a native of Alabama. He went to California in the early days of that State, and about the year 1865 came to Arizona, settling in Prescott, where he engaged in merchandising. He represented Yavapai County in this legislature, and afterwards served three or four years as Treasurer of Yavapai County. He died in Prescott in the early nineties.

John A. Rush was a member of this Legislature, and a Candidate for the office of Delegate to Congress, running against Governor McCormick in 1868. He first settled in the Salt River Valley, and thereafter went to Prescott and began practicing law, in which profession he was associated with Hon. E. W. Wells from 1875-76 to 1889.

Philip Drachman, a member of this Legislature, was born in Poland in 1830, and came to the United States when only sixteen years of age, arriving in Arizona in 1863. He engaged

in the general merchandise business at Tucson, and became one of the prominent business men of that place. During a busy business career, however, he found time to serve the territory and the town of his adoption, as, in addition to being a member of the Fourth Territorial Legislature, he was a member of the city council of Tucson for several terms. A man of strong individuality he left his mark upon the town of his adoption, and also upon the then Territory of Arizona. He died in the year 1889, after a long and honorable residence in Arizona, leaving behind him children who have continued his good work, one of whom, Mose Drachman, served as State Senator from Pima County in the Second State Legislature. Another, Samuel Arizona Drachman, said to be the second child born of Caucasian parents in Tucson, is at this time, 1918, a leading merchant in that city.



PHILIP DRACHMAN.

CHAPTER II.

THE FIFTH LEGISLATURE.

CONVENING OF — GOVERNOR'S MESSAGE — MEMORIALS — RESOLUTIONS — DEATH OF HENRY JENKINS — MURDER OF A. M. ERWIN BY INDIANS — TREASURER'S ESTIMATE OF EXPENSES — CONTENTION BETWEEN ARIZONA AND CALIFORNIA AS TO BOUNDARY LINE — APPOINTMENTS BY GOVERNOR — REPORT OF TERRITORIAL AUDITOR — REPORT OF TERRITORIAL TREASURER — INDEBTEDNESS OF TERRITORY.

The Fifth Legislature convened in Tucson on the 10th day of November, and ended on the 16th day of December, A. D. 1868. In this legislature Mohave and Pah-Ute Counties were represented in the Council by Octavius D. Gass. John T. Alsap, from Yavapai County, a resident of the Salt River Valley, was the only member of the Council from that County. Pima County was represented in the Council by Estevan Ochoa of Tucson, Henry Jenkins of Tucson, who died during the session of the Legislature on November 20th, 1868, Daniel H. Stickney, of Casa Blanco, and Alexander McKay, of Tubac. Joseph K. Hooper, who had been elected to the Council from Yuma County did not attend the session, so that county was not represented.

It will be seen that there was only a bare majority of the upper house during the greater portion of this Legislature, as at that time it was composed of nine members.

In the House of Representatives Andrew S. Gibbins represented Pah-Ute County, and John Smith was the only representative from Yavapai County out of six who had been elected. This was John Y. T. Smith, whose home at the time was at Camp McDowell. Thomas J. Bidwell and Oliver Lindsey, both of La Paz represented Yuma County. All of the Pima delegation, consisting of Jesus M. Elias, Francis H. Goodwin, Hiram S. Stevens, John Owen, John Anderson, Sol. W. Chambers, and Robert M. Crandal were present during the session. The lower House was entitled to a membership of eighteen, of whom seven failed to appear.

This Legislature organized by the election of John T. Alsap President of the Council, and Thomas J. Bidwell Speaker of the House. Among the officers of the Council were L. M. Jacobs, who was Engrossing Clerk, and B. M. Jacobs, Enrolling Clerk. They were afterwards prominently identified with the mercantile and banking business in Tucson. Another officer of the Council was the Chaplain, Bishop A. B. Salpointe, whose activities in connection with the early history of the Catholic Church in Arizona have heretofore been recited, and who is, at the present time, the presiding Catholic Bishop of the State.

Governor McCormick, in his message, called the attention of the Legislature to the activities of the hostile Apaches, and criticised the course pursued by the Federal Government which had produced no results proportionate to the expense incurred, leaving the Apache as bold and

successful in that day as ever before. He recommended the renewal of the memorials to Congress of the Third and Fourth Legislatures; urging the enlistment of volunteers by the Government for the subjugation of the Apaches.

In reference to railroads and telegraphs, he said:

“The building of a railroad across the Territory is one of the most important steps toward the subjugation of the Apache that can be taken, and for this reason and for many others that will occur to you, I suggest that you pray Congress to render such assistance to the company or companies proposing to build such road as will insure an early completion of the work. Were the Territory not infested with hostile Indians the difficulty and expense of getting here until such railroad is provided must make it slow of settlement and prove a great drawback to its progress. Under existing circumstances its construction were equal to the sending here of a dozen regiments of troops, and is essential in order to make the country available to the public, and to secure to the Government the revenues which with proper aid it will so abundantly return.

“Parties who since the meeting of the last Assembly have surveyed the routes across the Territory declare them to be most practicable, and there is a growing belief both in California and the East that the popular and profitable Pacific railroad will go through Arizona.

“In this connection I may refer to the fact that telegraphic communication is now complete

to Santa Fe, New Mexico, and that by connecting mails we receive news from all parts of the world in ten days. I am informed that parties stand ready to extend the wires across Arizona to California if reasonable encouragement is given. If you can in any way assist the enterprise I am sure you will do so."

The Indian question was treated as follows:

"The active military movements against the Wallapais brought most of them to terms some months since, and a number were placed upon a temporary reservation near Fort Mohave, but I learn they are again upon the warpath, roaming chiefly upon the Mohave and Prescott road. They are a weak tribe and their hostility cannot continue long.

"When work upon the Great Colorado reservation was suspended, owing to the exhaustion of the Congressional appropriation, the Apache, Mohave, Yavapai and other Indians gathered there, took to the mountains, and depredations near La Paz and Wickenburg are attributed to them. If they have begun hostilities it is probably in view of the recent killing by citizens of a venerable chief and others of their tribes at La Paz, a transaction which whether partaking of the unjustifiable character now reported or not, goes to demonstrate the importance of legislation to prevent the assumption by irresponsible parties of steps which sooner or later must produce disastrous results, counteracting the influence of the authorities and leading Indians to lose all confidence in the whites. While no treatment can

in my judgment be too severe for the hostile Indians, those disposed to be friendly should be entitled to the same protection from the laws as other persons owing allegiance to the Government enjoy.

“The Pimas and Maricopas lost a part of their crops by the unusual flood of September last, but they are generally prosperous, although but slightly provided for by the Government.

“All who comprehend the Indian character will rejoice that the Indian commission has reached the view long held on the frontier, that the Government should cease to recognize the Indian tribes as a domestic independent nation, except so far as it may be required to recognize them as such by existing treaties, and by treaties made but not yet ratified; that hereafter all Indians should be considered and held to be individually subject to the laws of the United States except where and while it is otherwise provided in such treaties. Such course will be commended to Congress by the Commission, with another good suggestion, viz.: to clothe, protect and assist all Indians, no matter of what tribe, who will go upon the reservations and stay there.”

The Governor said, in reference to mines and mining:

“The Wickenburg gold mines are worked without interruption, and steadily yield a large revenue. The Vulture lode, the Comstock of Arizona, now has a wide and merited fame. It is one of the richest, most extensive and remarkable deposits of gold quartz upon the continent,

and its return to this time is believed to be an earnest of what may be expected from it in the future.

“Unfortunately the mills erected in the vicinity of Prescott were put either upon worthless lodes or upon those in which ores predominate which cannot be made to pay by ordinary treatment. The chlorination process has lately been introduced there, and it is expected that it will prove successful as in California and Colorado. If such is the case, the hopeful people who have clung to that part of the Territory, under most annoying delays and disappointments, will speedily reap the reward due their patience and pertinacity.

“Upon the Colorado river little is doing in mining; the low price of copper has not warranted the continuous working of the lodes at Williams Fork and other points, although a renewal of operations at an early date is promised. From the Eureka and Castle Dome districts there is a steady and profitable shipment of lead ore to San Francisco, and work upon several silver lodes in that district is vigorously prosecuted as it is upon several gold lodes near La Paz and Hardyville.

“Below the Gila, the Cababi mines continue to yield a good return of silver and a fine mill is in process of erection at Apache Pass, where the gold lodes are attracting much attention and give excellent promise. Confidence in the mineral resources of the Territory is unshaken, and those most familiar with them believe that once secure from Indian depredations and made accessible

by the iron rail, Arizona will take front rank among gold, silver, and copper producing districts of the world.

“Late last year, at the request of J. Ross Browne, United States Mining Commissioner, I prepared as complete a statement of the mineral discoveries and results in the Territory as the time and material at my command would admit of. It will be found in his elaborate report upon the ‘Mineral Resources of the States and Territories West of the Rocky Mountains,’ published by Congress, and although imperfect in some particulars, will, I trust, be serviceable to the Territory in giving the public an idea of its mineral affluence, and attracting capital and population.

“Arizona, in common with the other mineral bearing Territories, is interested in the passage of the bill now before Congress looking to the endowment of a School of Mines from the proceeds of the tax upon gold and silver bullion, a most necessary and promising scientific movement, and it may be well for you to add to the appeal in its behalf by a memorial or resolution as you deem best.”

In reference to Agriculture, he said:

“Although the seasons vary with each year, it is now well established that most of the valleys and river bottoms throughout the Territory may be successfully cultivated. Much attention is given to agriculture, and the product of the year is largely in excess of that of any previous one. Corn, wheat, and barley attain a perfect growth at most points, and the

vegetables will compare favorably with those of any country. About Prescott the yield of potatoes of an excellent quality has this year been large. The few fruit trees planted to this time are thrifty, and it is thought the favorite fruits can be raised at various places in the Territory. The military are supplied with grain without drawing upon California as in years past, and comparatively little flour is brought from abroad. The prospect is that at an early day all required will be made in this Territory.

“The new and prosperous farming settlements of Phoenix, upon the Salt River, and Florence on the Gila river, are demonstrating the richness of the soil in the broad valleys of those great streams and the facility with which it may be irrigated and cultivated. The climate is found to be neither oppressive nor unhealthy as heretofore popularly supposed, and the belief that large communities have subsisted upon the produce of the valleys in the far past is strengthened by the accumulating evidence of their rare fertility. Tens of thousands of acres as valuable and easy of tillage as those now occupied remain unclaimed, and as the region is central, near to the reservations of the friendly Pima and Maricopa Indians, and seldom molested by the Apache, it offers peculiar inducements to settlers, and is commended to the numerous parties crossing the Territory from Texas and other states as having advantages equal, if not superior, to any held out to them farther west.

“While the lands that do not need irrigation and those that may be irrigated from streams

are extensive and all sufficient for a much larger population than is here at present, the soil of much of what is known as the desert country, is exceedingly rich, and if supplied with water by a system of artesian wells, as there is every reason to believe it may be at a reasonable cost, must abundantly repay cultivation. The great valleys and plains upon the roads from the Colorado to Wickenburg and Prescott, those between Sacaton and Tucson, and the plains about Tucson, those of the Cababi and Fresnal districts, and others not frequented by the Apaches, and more accessible than much of the land now occupied, may, I believe, with such wells, be made to blossom as the rose, and to produce crops that will surprise the world. I recommend, if the existing laws of the Territory regarding wells upon deserts is not liberal enough to induce the sinking of artesian wells, that it be made so."

Under the head of "Various Recommendations" the Governor recommended that more attention be given to educational matters; that a new and earnest memorial to Congress regarding the boundaries of the Territory at Arizona City, (Yuma), should be presented to Congress; that encouragement should be given citizens establishing ferries on the Gila and Salt rivers; such ferries being an absolute necessity to communication between the lower and upper country several months in each year, and the travel not being sufficient to support them; that the act of the last Assembly "to prevent and punish the sale of liquor to Indians, does not

secure the ends desired, and should be made more complete and stringent." That although the thoroughfares throughout the Territory were generally good, in some of the mining districts, particularly in Yavapai county, there was need of improvement and certain new roads were necessary to ready communication, among them being one from Wickenburg to Prescott, via Walnut Grove, which would save many miles of travel between those points, and one from Phoenix to Prescott, via the Agua Fria, which would open a direct and comparatively short route from Tucson to Prescott; that no aid having been given by the Government for the building of roads in the Territory, a reasonable appropriation for the construction of these new roads and for such improvements upon existing roads as may be necessary could, with propriety, be asked of Congress.

Continuing, the Governor stated:

"There is a gratifying improvement in social life throughout the Territory. In the chief towns the houses are of a better character than a year or two since, and the ranchmen who have prospered have generally improved their structures. There is a growing disposition to live rather than stay here, to build homes and make them attractive, to cultivate household affections and loves, and society is assuming that organization which is necessary to pleasing and profitable existence."

The Governor concluded his message by referring to his election as a Delegate to the Forty-First Congress of the United States, and

pledged his support there to all measures which might be introduced to upbuild and promote the prosperity of the Territory.

The first memorial passed by this Legislature was one to Congress asking for an appropriation of a hundred thousand dollars for the erection of a capital building at Tucson, the seat of government. Another was to the Secretary of War asking that authority be given to the commanding officers of the various military posts, to furnish arms and ammunition to citizens known to them, whenever it was believed by said commanding officer that such citizens could and would render effective service against hostile Indians, the arms to be receipted for by the parties to whom they were loaned, and to be promptly returned upon the completion of the service for which they were given.

Another memorial to Congress asked that the time fixed by Congress for the appropriation of the net proceeds of the Internal Revenue to the building of a penitentiary, be extended until the sum appropriated, forty thousand dollars, should have accumulated. Another asked for the establishment of a Mail Route from Tucson to Sasabi Flat, and still another asked Congress for an appropriation of \$2,000 to pay for a library for the Territory. The Legislature also memorialized Congress for an appropriation to codify the laws of the Territory, and also asked that a Surveyor-General be appointed for the Land district of Arizona Territory, and for an appropriation to survey the land in said district.

This Legislature passed joint or concurrent resolutions as follows:

One requesting the Territory's Delegate in Congress to ask for the establishment of a mail route from Tucson to Wickenburg via Camp Grant, Florence, Phoenix and Camp McDowell; also that a semi-weekly service be put on from Prescott, Arizona, to Albuquerque, New Mexico; one recommending the establishment of a United States Depositary at Tucson; also a joint resolution which is in the nature of an appropriation bill, which reads as follows:

“Be It Resolved by the Legislative Assembly of the Territory of Arizona:

“That the Territorial Treasurer shall set apart from the Territorial funds, from time to time, a sufficient amount of money to pay all the legal, current and contingent expenses of the Territory of Arizona, for the year ending December first, A. D. one thousand eight hundred and sixty nine.

“Approved, December 15, 1868.”

A concurrent resolution was passed asking Arizona's Delegate in Congress to solicit an appropriation of five thousand dollars to be given as a premium to the person or persons who should first sink an artesian well upon the desert lands of the Territory, the same to be paid by the Secretary of the Interior, upon his receiving satisfactory proof that such well was a success, said proof to be furnished by the Governor and Secretary of the Territory; also the following resolution regarding his Excellency Governor Richard C. McCormick:

“Resolved, by the House of Representatives, the Council concurring, that the fifth Legislative Assembly, cordially joins in the sentiment expressed by previous Legislatures, that his Excellency Governor Richard C. McCormick, has both in his official and personal relations, shown himself to be the true friend and intelligent advocate of the best interests of Arizona.

“Resolved, that his long and zealous public service, in the face of many obstacles, and his thorough knowledge of the country and its resources, will entitle him to the confidence shown by the people in his election as their Representative in the Congress of the United States, and must ever honorably identify his name with the organization and history of the Territory.”

One member of the Legislature, Henry Jenkins, of Pima, died during the session. The following obituary by one of his colleagues, Mr. McKey, of Pima, was delivered in the Council on the 20th of November:

“Mr President—It becomes my sorrowful duty this morning to announce to this body the demise yesterday at one o'clock P. M. of one of the most honored and esteemed members of this Council, Hon. Henry Jenkins, from Pima County. He was a gentleman of the ‘olden school,’ so much so, in fact, he never could adapt himself fully to the latter day free and easy life of the West. Of an excellent education, and a careful early training, he never forgot those associations. Much in public life and ever popular, familiar with all public questions, and having a high sense of honor, as a pioneer he

was hopeful and patient; as a legislator he was ever careful, judicious and upright; as a citizen, liberal, courteous and public spirited. Having frailties as all have, even they 'leaned to virtue's side.' He was a member of the Third, Fourth and Fifth Legislatures of Arizona, and in his earlier years he had been a member of the New York Legislature, and was there considered the peer of the great statesmen of the Empire State.

"He leaves a family in Albany, New York, to mourn his loss. We regret him as a brother member, and as an esteemed citizen, but not as those who have no hope. We have faith to believe that we shall all meet again beyond the valley and shadow of death. May his remains rest in peace."

Another member of this Legislature was killed by the Apaches before the Legislature convened, A. M. Erwin, upon whose death a special committee reported the following resolutions expressive of the sympathy and condolence of the Legislature:

"Whereas, it has pleased an all wise Providence to call from our midst Mr. A. M. Erwin, a member elect of this body, and whereas, in his decease our Territory has lost one of its most noble and energetic citizens, therefore, be it

"Resolved, that we fully appreciate the brave and valuable services rendered to the people of this and adjoining Territories by the deceased during his term of service in the California Volunteers.

"Resolved, that we deeply sympathize with the relatives of the deceased, that one so young,

so brave, so noble in all his traits of character, should be thus early taken from them by the fatal hand of the so much dreaded Apache.

“Resolved, that the Clerk of this House furnish the relatives of the deceased with an official copy of these resolutions.”

The committee on Military and Indian Affairs made the following report:

“First. The Territorial Militia have neither organization nor ammunition. Therefore, we are unable to afford any protection to the people of this Territory, and this condition will continue unless the General Government furnishes the requisite means of defense.

“Second. The Indians of the Territory are arrayed in deadly hostility to the whites, butchering and robbing on the highways and ranches, and every footpath from the Rio Grande to the Colorado river. Life and property are unsafe even in the immediate vicinity of military posts. The time has arrived, in the opinion of your committee, when some decided action should be taken in the premises, so that white settlers in the country can understand whether they have the predominating power, or that the Government will protect its citizens against a horde of demons in human shape, called ‘Lo! the poor Indian.’

“The Legislature of the Territory has respectfully memorialized Congress for the four past consecutive terms; but up to the present time no action has been taken in the premises.

“Your committee are of the opinion that our Delegates have been negligent of their duty, or

the Government has been unmindful of the wants of the citizens of this Territory.

“The present military force in the Territory is inadequate to the protection of the citizens therein; and it matters not how well the present number of troops may be disposed of, or however anxious the commanding officer of the district or the officers and soldiers under his command may be, to render assistance to the settlers, under the present arrangement of military affairs. Every effort would prove an entire failure, unless a larger number of troops can be placed in the command of the district commander, in order to give them the opportunity of making rapid movements, and following up the same with success.

“But so long as certain Indians are permitted to draw rations from certain government posts or reservations, so called, to sustain their families and supply their own wants, and fit themselves out for a more successful campaign against the whites, it is utterly impossible for the military to put an end to these infernal devils, called Apaches.

“Your committee fully believes in placing the entire management of Indian affairs under the control of the military commanders of the different military districts, until they are subjugated and placed on reservations; and are made to earn their bread by the sweat of their brows, instead of murdering and robbing the whites. The blood of white men cries revenge from every hill, valley and nook.

“The mourning of the fond wife for her husband is borne on every breeze. The cry of the

orphan is heard in every hamlet. Numbers of our people have been taken captive, tortured cruelly, and burned at the stake. During the last seven years over eight hundred persons have been murdered in the highways and ranches within the limits of this Territory. The roads and byways throughout this Territory are marked by monuments of savage ferocity; fresh victims fall day by day on their journey through the country.

“Your Committee would be unmindful of their duty as Representatives of the people, and as citizens of the Territory did they fail to represent their constituents as a law-abiding, industrious and ever hopeful community.

“Your Committee would urgently request our Delegate in Congress to represent the facts set forth in this report in unqualified terms.

“(Signed) D. H. STICKNEY,
“Chairman of Committee on Military and Indian Affairs.”

An estimate of the expense for running the Territory for the year ending November 1st, 1869, was made by John B. Allen, Territorial Treasurer, and was as follows:

“TERRITORY OF ARIZONA,

“Office of the Treasurer.

“Tucson, December 8, 1868.

“Hon. Thomas J. Bidwell, Speaker of the House of Representatives, Fifth Legislative Assembly.

“Sir:—In pursuance to law, I herewith submit an estimate of the current expenses of the

Territory from November 1st, 1868, to November, 1st, 1869, viz.:

Expenses of Supreme Court, as audited by Judges of the late Supreme Court	\$ 293.52
Salary of Territorial Auditor.....	650.00
Salary of Territorial Treasurer.....	650.00
Rent of room for Territorial Library..	150.00
Distribution of Acts and Journals....	50.00
Territorial Prisoners	500.00
Incidental Expenses	150.00
Total.....	\$2,443.52

“Other expenses may arise during the year.

“Very respectfully,

“Your obedient servant,

“(Signed) JOHN B. ALLEN,

“Territorial Treasurer.”

In reference to the contention as to the boundary line between Arizona and California, the Committee on Counties and County Boundaries, through its Chairman, Mr. McKey, submitted the following:

“Mr. President:—It devolves upon me to report, as Chairman of the Committee on Counties and County Boundaries from the Council and the Committee on Federal Relations from the House, who met jointly, and who had under consideration the matter of the disputed strip of land south of the Gila river and east of the Colorado, and in connection therewith, a report made by the Hon. Mr. Meagher to the California Legislature upon the subject:

“He says, speaking of that State, that ‘our southern boundary has been considered in this State as determined and run by the Boundary Commissioners of Mexico and the United States.’

“As to this point none, I presume, are disposed to disagree with him, but as to what precise territory was included in that boundary there seems to be a question in the minds of the California Legislators.

“The report before referred to, appears to be based upon as much ignorance with regard to this question, as was the action of the first two Legislatures of Arizona, which committed the grave error of memorializing Congress upon the subject; when, if they had examined the question, they would have found that the State of California never claimed the disputed land, and that Congress had specifically included it in the Territory of New Mexico in the Organic Act for that Territory.

“The Constitution of California in giving the boundaries of that State, claims the middle of the main channel of the Colorado River below the thirty-fifth parallel of north latitude down to the line between Mexico and the United States, as her line.

“Arizona claims that the western boundary line, consists of the middle of the main channel of the Colorado river, running southerly to the Sonora line.

“How it was possible for the first Legislature of this Territory to overlook her own acts, as to this matter, and the language of the Organic Act of New Mexico, so far as to recognize the

usurpation by the county of San Diego, as to cause it to memorialize Congress upon the subject, is a matter of astonishment, to say the least of it.

“Mr. Meagher says ‘Recently the Territory of Arizona has set up a claim,’ etc.

“He is mistaken in his statement: we have always claimed this Territory and have ever maintained that there were no tenable reasons why San Diego should hold any authority over it. Let us see for what reasons or upon what grounds we base these claims.

“In the first place, in the year 1849, California, by the vote of her people ratified the Constitution of that State, in which the limits are plainly set forth. After fixing the northern line to where it intersects the 39th degree of north latitude, it says: Thence running in a straight line in a southerly direction to the river Colorado, at a point where it intersects the 35th degree of north latitude, thence down the middle of the channel of said river to the boundary line between Mexico and the United States, as established by the treaty of May 30th, 1848, thence west, etc., to the Pacific Ocean.

“Now, Sir, it would appear that the above-quoted language was sufficient to satisfy any unprejudicial mind that California never claimed an inch of land east of the Colorado river, nor has she ever done so, until the last session of the Legislature of that State, which was induced by the wrong action of the Legislature of this Territory in memorializing Congress to give to us that which I shall convince any and all who will carefully examine the subject, was always ours.

But before entering into a description of the peculiarities of the junction of the Gila and Colorado rivers, I deem it necessary to draw your attention to the provisions of the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo.

“In that treaty (article 5) after bounding the Southern Territory acquired thereby, until coming to the Gila river, it says:

“‘Thence down the middle of the Gila until it empties into the Rio Colorado; thence across the Rio Colorado, following the division line between Upper and Lower California to the Pacific Ocean.’ But, says the treaty, in order to preclude all difficulty in tracing upon the limit separating Upper from Lower California, it is agreed that the said limits shall consist of a straight line down to the Rio Gila, where it unites with the Colorado to a point on the Pacific Ocean, etc.

“To those who are not conversant with the minute points of the geography of the junction of these two rivers, it is necessary to say that at the junction, and for miles around and above this junction, it is one immense mud flat, over which the Colorado river (at all times when high) overflows; and all the apparent circumstances go to show, and those who were on the ground at the time of running the line by the Commissioners who fixed the line between the Republic of Mexico and the United States, by the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, say that all of said flat country was inundated at that time.

“This accounts for fixing the initial point up the Rio Gila some hundreds of yards from its actual mouth, when both rivers are low, advan-

tage being taken of the high condition of the Colorado, in connection with the language of the treaty, which says:

“ ‘That the boundary line between Upper and Lower California shall consist of a straight line drawn from the middle of the Rio Gila, where the Colorado, etc.’ ”

“The high condition of the Colorado at the time, owing to the flatness of the country, left the place of unity between the two streams very indefinite; but a point was agreed upon between the Commissioners from which to start, for the purpose of dividing the two Californias. But there is no good reason to doubt but that the intention of the plenipotentiaries was at the time of making the treaty, to cross the Colorado river directly from the fact that the general course of the Colorado is north and south, and this dividing line runs directly west; but owing to a short bend from south to west, this line starting from the agreed initial point, did not cross the Colorado until the Commissioners had run six and a half miles, cutting off a strip of land between the line and the river on the west varying from a few hundred yards to three-quarters of a mile in width.

“It must be kept in view, however, that this line was to be run for the express purpose of dividing Upper from Lower California.

“Now that it is understood that this line was for the sole purpose of dividing the Californias, will any one claim that it divided any part of the Californias before it crossed the Rio Colorado?

“If either of these States ever claimed an inch of territory east of the Colorado river,

then it were possible, but as neither of them ever made any such claim, then it is simply ridiculous to suppose that this line divided them before reaching their territory; the initial point notwithstanding, which was so fixed by the Commissioners for the reasons before given. And when running this line, where they struck the bank of the Gila on the south or western side, from the middle of the mouth thereof, they came to the bank some four hundred yards from the Colorado river, and run six and one half miles before coming to the Colorado river. But bearing in mind that California in her Constitution claims the middle of the Colorado as her boundary, as between her and any other Territory of the United States, and this Constitution was accepted by Congress, and California was admitted as a State, September 9th, 1850.

“The Organic Act creating the Territory of New Mexico by Congress was approved on the same day, and in giving the boundary limits of said Territory, in this act they commenced the boundary in the Colorado river, where the boundary line with the Republic of Mexico crosses the same; thence easterly with the said boundary line to the Rio Grande, with the meanderings east, north and then west, until it intersects the line of California at the northwest corner of Pah-Ute County; thence back on the California line down the Colorado river to the place of beginning. I ask, is this conclusive?

“California has never claimed this disputed territory until the action of her last Legislature. And Congress, right at the time of the admis-

sion of California as a State, did include this strip within the limits of the Territory of New Mexico, and has since created all the Territory west of a certain line, the Territory of Arizona, which had been included with the former limits of New Mexico.

“In the name of common sense and good reason, if this strip of land belonged to California, why did not California protest, or why has she not long before this made complaint? Or, if we admit for a moment that it did belong to her, why did Congress commence the boundary of New Mexico by starting six and a half miles off the edge or border of the Territory to be prescribed by said boundary, and follow thence easterly, northerly, and westerly to the California line, at the northwest corner of Pah-Ute County; and thence following said California lines back and down the Colorado river to place of beginning? What was the object in commencing six or seven miles down the Colorado river and running to the Gila by the line formerly established by the Commissioners, and then afterwards, when they got back to the mouth of the Gila river, why did they run down the river to the place of beginning?

“Did the territory included within these limits below the Gila belong to California? Sir, it is presumption to contend for any such thing. Now, Mr. President, all of the foregoing may be summed up in these few questions:

“Has California ever claimed this strip of land before her last session? She has never before claimed it.

“Do her constitutional bounds claim it? That instrument does not claim any territory west of the Colorado river, nor ever has, nor did either of the old Californias under Mexican rule claim any such thing.

“But Congress did claim and include it within the bounds of the Territory of New Mexico in her Organic Act. And, last, though not least, Arizona did claim it from her first organization. But from want of a proper understanding in the first two Legislatures she did commit the grave mistake in memorializing Congress to give her territory already belonging to her by nature, by the Organic Act, and the law of this Territory and the laws of Congress.”

The foregoing seems to have been conclusive as to that controversy as there was no subsequent action taken in reference thereto by California or by Congress.

The Governor submitted the following to the Legislature:

“TERRITORY OF ARIZONA,

“Office of the Governor.

“Tucson, December 12, 1868.

“Hon. John T. Alsap, President of the Council:

“Sir: The following appointments have been made by me since the adjournment of the last legislature, and are respectfully submitted to the Council for confirmation:

“December 31st, 1867, John B. Allen, Territorial Treasurer.

“July 1st, 1868, Charles H. Lord, Territorial Auditor, vice James Grant, resigned.

“July 20th, 1868, John S. Thayer, as Probate Judge, vice Sidney R. DeLong, resigned.

“September 7th, 1868, James H. Toole, Adjutant-General.

“(Signed) RICHARD C. McCORMICK.”

The Territorial Auditor made the following report:

“Tucson, October 20th, 1868.

“Hon. R. C. McCormick, Governor of the Territory of Arizona.

“In accordance with the provisions of section 10 of the Act approved October 5th, 1867, I herewith furnish you a full exhibit of the claims audited and warrants issued by me from the time of my appointment, July 1st, 1868, to this date.

“I am, with respect, your obedient servant.

“CHARLES H. LORD,
“Territorial Auditor.”

LIST OF CLAIMS AUDITED AND WARRANTS ISSUED, 1868.

July 1st, 1868.

Claim No. 116—Lord & Williams, for cost and charges on bond books for Territory, under act of October 5th, 1867. Warrant No. 140.....	\$ 75.00
Claim No. 117—Lord & Williams, for interest on bonds, gold or equivalent; Act of October 5th, 1867. Warrant No. 141	475.00
Claim No. 118—Lord & Williams, for interest on bonds, Act October 5th, 1867. Warrant No. 142.....	475.00

Claim No. 119—Lord & Williams, for interest on bonds, Act of October 5th, 1867, gold or equivalent.	
Warrant No. 143.....	275.00
July 3rd, 1868.	
Claim No. 120—G. H. Oury, for six months' salary as Attorney General; Act October 5th, 1867.	
Warrant No. 145	30.00
July 24th, 1868.	
Claim No. 121—J. B. Allen, for three months' salary as Territorial Treasurer; under Act October 5th, 1867.	
Warrant No. 145	162.50
October 19th, 1868.	
Claim No. 122—P. R. Brady, Sheriff of Pima County, for care of Territorial prisoners; Act of October 5th, 1867.	
Warrant No. 146.....	192.00."

The Territorial Treasurer made the following report:

“TERRITORY OF ARIZONA,

“Office of the Treasurer.

“Tucson, November 1, 1868.

“To the Honorable the Fifth Legislative Assembly:

“In compliance with the requirements of section 10, of ‘An Act concerning Territorial Indebtedness,’ approved October 5th, 1867, I have the honor to submit herewith a report of the transactions of the office from the 15th of January, 1868, at which time I assumed its duties, to this date, accompanied by statements rela-

tive to the financial condition of the Territory, more particularly detailed by statement 'A'; showing in tabular form an account of all Bonds issued by the Treasurer since the organization of the Territory.

"Statement 'B' giving a detail of all warrants outstanding, with interest thereon, computed November 1st, 1868.

"Statement 'C,' an exhibit of all receipts and disbursements.

"Statement 'D,' recapitulating the above, and showing the entire indebtedness in currency, up to November 1st, 1868.

"I regret to say that no report, either monthly or quarterly has been received at this office from the Treasurer of Pah-Ute County since my assuming the office; from the Treasurer of Mohave County since July last; from the Treasurer of Yuma County since August 8th; and from the Treasurer of Yavapai County since July 6th.

"I do not know, nor have I had any means of ascertaining, what amount of taxes has been levied and collected in the above mentioned counties during the present year for Territorial purposes.

"The report of the proceedings of the Board of Supervisors of Yavapai County, as published in *Miner*, states that twenty-five cents on the one hundred dollars was levied for Territorial purposes, although the law requires that fifty cents on the one hundred dollars should be levied.

"It will be too apparent to you, from a consideration of this statement, that a careful revision of the revenue laws is necessary.

“Although the people have cheerfully contributed of their hard earnings a sufficient amount to meet all the obligations of the Territory, yet through the delinquency of a few county officers, who were sworn to perform, and are paid to do their duty, we are compelled to declare officially that Arizona has failed to make good her promises to pay.

“ESCHEATED ESTATES.

“During the last five years many of our bold pioneers have fallen by the hand of the dread Apache, and some by disease, who have left large estates to the Territory, and yet not a dollar has reached the Treasury from this source, although some estates have been in the hands of administrators for years. It is due to the memory of those worthy men that the proceeds of their estates be applied toward establishing public schools, so that their labor may find some reward.

“In this connection I would respectfully recommend the passage of a special act in respect to escheated estates now in the hands of the several administrators, the effect of which will be to place within one year, into the Treasury, the proceeds of all escheated estates.

“I would furthermore respectfully recommend that the County Treasurers be made *ex officio* Public Administrators of their respective counties, and be required to make quarterly returns to the Territorial Treasurer, the same as in other matters.

“The proceeds of escheated estates once in the Treasury, the Legislature could make such disposition thereof as they deem proper.

“The act approved October 5th, 1868, entitled ‘An Act concerning Territorial Indebtedness,’ contemplated the funding of the Bonds and Warrants therein specified.

“No bonds have been issued under the provisions of that Act. A question involving the legality of the act having arisen, and being now pending before the Courts, parties holding those Bonds and Warrants prefer retaining them, and the Treasurer is barred from paying them principal or interest. The repeal of sections 1, 2, 3, 4, 7 and 9 of said act is necessary.

“It may be of interest for you to know that the amount of internal revenue assessed in Pima County from January 1st to October 30th, 1868, is \$7,791, and the amount collected up to November 1st, 1868, \$6,050.

“No statement has been received from the Collectors in other counties.

“All of which is respectfully submitted.

“JOHN B. ALLEN,
“Territorial Treasurer.”

The statement “D,” referred to in the Treasurer’s Report, showed that from the 1st day of June, 1868, to and including the 31st day of October, 1868, the Treasurer had received from all sources, the sum of \$8,479.86, and that during the same period he had disbursed the sum of \$5,611.80, leaving cash in the Treasury, \$2,868.06. At the date last mentioned the Territory had a total outstanding indebtedness of \$62,961.05, evidenced by bonds and warrants.

CHAPTER III.

THE FIFTH LEGISLATURE (Continued).

ACTS PASSED BY — DANCING LICENSED — ACT TO
ESTABLISH PUBLIC SCHOOLS—TEXT OF—ACT
LOCATING TERRITORIAL PRISON AT OR NEAR
PHOENIX.

The first act of any importance was an act to license dance houses, which read as follows:

“Section 1. It shall be lawful, and the collectors of licenses of the several counties of this Territory are hereby authorized and directed to collect a license tax of not more than twenty nor less than five dollars, of any and all persons who shall keep a dance house within the limits of any town or village in this Territory, which license shall be collected for each night of dancing.

“Sec. 2. All moneys collected under the provisions of this act shall be appropriated by the Supervisors of the respective counties, to grading and repairing of the streets of the town or village in which such license shall be collected.

“Sec. 3. This act shall be governed by the license laws of this Territory in all respects, except the manner of the appropriations of the moneys.”

At that time there was no mining camp, village or town in the Territory that was not enlivened after dark with the music of the dance, where the belles of the lower world held high carnival and the boys spent their time and money between dances on drinks.

An act concerning public highways and streets in towns having a population exceeding five hundred, provided for a street superintendent to be appointed by the Board of Supervisors, at such compensation as they might deem advisable to see that all the streets were properly laid out and graded. Under this act the street superintendent was empowered to compel any owner of any lot or lots to grade the same, or the streets in front thereof as he saw fit, and in case any owner should fail or refuse to comply with the provisions of the act in this respect, the street superintendent was empowered to bring suit before a justice of the peace of the county in which the said town was located, and upon conviction of such person or persons, he or they should be fined not less than ten nor more than a hundred dollars for each and every violation of the act. All fines collected were to be paid into the county treasury and all such moneys were to be applied by the Board of Supervisors to the purpose of repairing the streets or highways of the towns in which such fines were collected. Provision was made also for the redemption of the bonds of the Territory issued under an act approved November 9th, 1864, entitled "An Act to provide for the contingent expenses of the Territorial Government," and also for the payment of Territorial Warrants; also an act creating the office of Attorney-General of the Territory, defining his duties, and fixing his salary at \$400 per annum.

This Legislature passed an act to establish public schools in the Territory of Arizona, which was the first earnest effort in legislation

in that direction, it being a matter of great importance at the time, and as it became the foundation of our school system, I give the act in its entirety:

“Section 1. That the Board of Supervisors of each of the several organized counties, and every county that may be hereafter organized within this Territory, be and they are hereby constituted Boards of Education for each of the several counties of this Territory, in which they have been duly elected as Boards of Supervisors; and shall perform such duties as such Boards of Education, as may be required of them, by the provisions of this act. They shall hold their offices during the time for which they have been elected as said Boards of Supervisors for their several Counties.

“Sec. 2. Said Boards shall hold an annual meeting, at the County seat of each of their respective counties, on the same or subsequent day of their first regular meetings as Boards of Supervisors; and such other special meetings during the year as the Boards may, in their judgment, deem proper and necessary.

“Sec. 3. Said Boards of Education of the several counties in this Territory, shall from time to time, as they may deem proper, recommend to the Legislature such alterations, revisions and amendments of existing laws, relating to Common Schools, as in their judgment are demanded, in order to the perfecting of a system of general education in this Territory; and they shall annually make a report of their official doings, and of the state and condition of the

schools in their respective counties, to the Legislature during the first week of its session.

“Sec. 4. Said Boards may at any time fill a vacancy in the office of Superintendent of Public Schools in their respective counties.

“Sec. 5. The Boards of Education in the several counties shall select a list of books for the different branches usually taught in Common Schools, which list shall constitute the text books for district schools, and shall cause such list to be published in all the newspapers in said county, in the month of January in each year; and on and after such publications, no other books but those prescribed in the list by said Boards, shall be used in any of the district schools in their respective counties, except by permission of the Superintendent of Public Schools or the District Board.

“Sec. 6. It shall be the duty of the Board of Supervisors of the several counties in this Territory, to divide their counties into school districts when necessary, and subdivide the same whenever petitioned by a majority of the citizens thereof, and to furnish the County Recorder of such county with a written description of the boundaries of each district so formed; which description must be filed with said County Recorder before said district shall be entitled to proceed with its organization by the election of School District officers. Whenever it shall be deemed necessary to form a School District from parts of two or more counties, it shall be the duty of the Board of Supervisors of each county in which any part of the proposed joint district shall be situated, to unite in laying out

such joint district; and the Board of Supervisors so assisting, shall file a description of said joint district with the County Recorder of their county; provided, however, that said Boards shall not be allowed to form a district, unless the area comprising said district shall contain within its limits twenty children of the age four and under twenty-one.

“Sec. 7. The several counties in this Territory shall, at their annual election, elect a competent person to be Superintendent of Public Schools in and for such county, who shall hold his office during the school year commencing on the first of November, or until his successor is elected and qualified; who shall receive for his service four dollars each day actually spent in the discharge of his legal duties, and a reasonable sum for his annual report to the County Board of Education in his county; and every Superintendent of Schools shall make out in detail his account for official services rendered, and make oath or affirmation to the correctness of the same before some Justice of the Peace in the county in which he resides, which oath or affirmation shall be certified by said Justice before such Superintendent’s account shall be presented to the County Recorder for allowance, who shall audit and allow the same, or so much thereof as is just and reasonable, and the same shall be paid out of the County Treasury upon the order of the County Recorder, who is empowered to draw orders for the same; but no order shall be drawn to any such Superintendent until he shall have filed with the County Recorder a receipt from the County Board of

Public Schools for the statistical returns of the preceding school year, in pursuance of the requirements of section seventeen of this act.

“Sec. 8. The County Superintendent of Public Schools shall have charge of the common school interests of the county. He shall before he enters upon the discharge of the duties of his office, take and subscribe an oath or affirmation to support the Constitution of the United States and the act organizing this Territory, and faithfully to discharge the duties of his office, which oath or affirmation shall be filed in the office of the County Recorder. He shall execute a bond with approved security, payable to the Board of County Supervisors; for the use of common schools in said county, in the penal sum of five hundred dollars. Said bond must be approved by the Board of Supervisors, and filed in the office of the County Recorder.

“Sec. 9. It shall be the duty of the County Treasurer, on the first Monday of April in each year, to furnish the County Superintendent of Public Schools with a statement of the amount of money in the County Treasury belonging to the School Fund, and he shall pay the same upon the order of said Superintendent to the proper district officers.

“Sec. 10. It shall be the duty of the County Superintendent of Public Schools, on the second Monday of April in each year, or as soon thereafter as he shall receive the statement of the County Treasurer, certifying the amount of money in the County Treasury for the use of common schools for the current year, to apportion such amount to the several districts or parts

of districts within the county, in proportion to the *members* of children residing in each, over the age of four and under the age of twenty-one years, as the same shall appear from the last annual reports of the Clerks of their respective districts, and he shall draw his order on the County Treasurer in favor of the several district Treasurers, for the amount so apportioned to each district.

“Sec. 11. It shall be the duty of the County Superintendents to visit all such common schools within their respective counties as shall be organized according to law, at least once each year, and oftener if they shall deem it necessary. At such visitations the Superintendents shall examine into the state and condition of such schools as respects the progress in learning and the order and government of the schools; and they may give advice to the teachers of such schools as to the government thereof and the course of study to be pursued therein, and shall adopt all requisite measures for the inspection, examination and regulation of the schools, and for the improvement of the scholars in learning. Every superintendent of common schools shall take, or cause to be taken, between the first day of October and the thirtieth day of November in each year, an enumeration of all the children resident in his county, between the ages of four and twenty-one years.

“Sec. 12. He shall see that the annual reports of the Clerks of the several school districts in his county are made correctly, and in due time.

“Sec. 13. He shall hold a public examination for all persons offering themselves as teachers of common schools, at the county seat of his county, on the last Saturday of April and October in each year, notice of which shall be given as publicly as possible; at which time he shall grant certificates for not less than three months nor more than one year, to such persons as he may find qualified to teach orthography, reading, writing, arithmetic, geography and English grammar. All persons offering themselves as teachers, must produce evidence of good moral character, and possess the requisite capacity to conduct and govern a common school; and any person receiving such certificate shall be deemed a qualified teacher within the meaning of this act. Persons applying to the County Superintendent for a certificate at any other time than at the public examination, shall pay to the said Superintendent the sum of one dollar for his services.

“Sec. 14. Whenever a school district shall be formed in any County, Superintendent of Public Schools of such County, shall within fifteen days thereafter, prepare a notice of the formation of such district, describing its boundaries and stating the number thereof, and appointing a time and place for the district meeting. He shall cause the notice thus prepared to be posted in at least five public places in the district, at least ten days before the time appointed for such meeting.

“Sec. 15. The County Superintendent of Public Schools shall perform all other duties of

his said office that now are, or hereafter may be prescribed by law; and he shall deliver to his successor, within ten days after the expiration of his term of office, all books and papers pertaining to his office.

“Sec. 16. If any vacancy occurs in the office of County Superintendent of Public Schools, by death, resignation or otherwise, notice thereof shall be given by the County Recorder to the Board of Supervisors, who shall as soon as practicable appoint some suitable person to fill the vacancy; and the person receiving such appointment, shall, before entering upon the discharge of the duties of his office, file his oath or affirmation in the County Recorder’s office as hereinbefore provided, and he shall discharge all the duties of the office of County Superintendent of Public Schools until a successor is elected and qualified. He shall also give a like bond to that required by this act to be given by the County Superintendent of Public Schools.

“Sec. 17. The County Superintendent shall make full and complete annual returns to the several Boards of Supervisors in their respective counties, between the first and thirty-first day of October in each year, of the number of children between the ages of four and twenty-one years, in the school districts within their respective counties; also the number of qualified teachers employed, the length of time each district school has been taught during the year, the kind of text books used; and the amounts expended in each district, out of moneys raised for educational purposes, and for what purpose such amount was expended; the amounts raised

in each district and the county, by taxation, or otherwise, for educational interests, and any other items that may be of service to the County Boards of Education in preparing their annual reports.

“Sec. 18. The inhabitants qualified to vote at a school district meeting, lawfully assembled, shall have power:

“First: To appoint a chairman to preside at said meeting, in the absence of the Director.

“Second: To adjourn from time to time.

“Third: To elect a Director, Clerk and Treasurer, who shall possess the qualifications of voters, as prescribed in the next section of this act, at the first and each annual meeting thereafter.

“Fourth: To designate by vote a site for a district school house.

“Fifth: To vote a tax annually, not exceeding one-half per cent on taxable property in the district, as the meeting shall deem sufficient, to purchase or lease a site, and to build, hire or purchase a schoolhouse, and to keep in repair and furnish the same with the necessary fuel, stoves and benches.

“Sixth: To vote a district tax annually, not exceeding one-half of one per cent, on the taxable property in the district, for the pay of teachers' wages in the district.

“Seventh: To authorize and direct the sale of any school house site, or other property belonging to the district, when the same shall no longer be needful for the district.

“Eighth: To vote such tax as may be necessary to furnish the school house with black-

boards, outline maps, and apparatus necessary for illustrating the principles of science, or for discharge of any debts or liabilities of the district lawfully incurred; provided, the tax shall not exceed one-fourth of one per cent per annum, and may be applied to any other purposes by a vote of the district at any regularly called meeting.

“Ninth: To give such directions and make such provisions as may be deemed necessary in relation to the prosecution or defense of any suit or proceeding in which the district may be a party.

“Tenth: To alter or repeal their proceedings from time to time, as occasion may require, and to do any other business contemplated in this act.

“Sec. 19. The following persons shall be entitled to vote at any district meeting. All persons possessing the qualifications of electors, as defined by the act organizing this Territory, and the laws of this Territory, and who shall be actual residents of the district at the time of offering to vote at such election.

“Sec. 20. If any person offering to vote at a school district meeting shall be challenged as unqualified by any legal voter, the chairman presiding shall declare to the person challenged the qualifications of a voter, and if such challenge be not withdrawn, the chairman, who is hereby authorized, shall tender to the person offering to vote, the following oath or affirmation: ‘You do solemnly swear (or affirm) that you are an actual resident of this district, and that you are qualified by law to vote at this

meeting.' Any person taking such oath or affirmation, shall be entitled to vote on all questions voted upon at such meeting.

"Sec. 21. Every school district shall be deemed duly organized when the officers constituting the district board shall be elected; they shall signify their acceptance to the County Superintendent in writing, which he shall file in his office. Every person duly elected to the office of Director, Clerk or Treasurer of any school district, and having entered upon the duties of his office, shall neglect or refuse to perform any duty required of him by the provisions of this act, shall forfeit the sum of ten dollars to the School District Fund.

"Sec. 22. The officers of each school district shall be a Director, Clerk and Treasurer, who shall constitute the District Board, and who shall hold their respective offices until the annual meeting next following their election or appointment, and until their successors are elected and qualified.

"Sec. 23. Every school district, organized in pursuance of the provisions of this act, shall be a body corporate, in law, and shall possess the usual powers of a corporation for public purposes, by the name and style of 'School District No. (such number as may be designated by the County Superintendent), County, (the name of the county in which the district is situated) Territory of Arizona,' and in that name may sue and be capable of contracting and being contracted with, and holding such real or personal estate as it may come in possession of by will

or otherwise, or as is authorized to be purchased by the provisions of this act.

“Sec. 24. An annual meeting of the qualified directors of each school district shall be held on the last Saturday of September of each year, at such hour as the District Board shall name. Special meetings may be called by any member of the District Board, or by any five legal voters, but notice of such special meeting, stating the purposes for which it is called, shall be posted in at least three public places within the district, ten days previous to the time of meeting.

“Sec. 25. Whenever the time for holding an annual meeting in any district shall pass without such meeting being held, the Clerk, or in his absence, any other member of the District Board, within twenty days after the time for holding said annual meeting shall have passed, may give notice of a special meeting by putting up written notices thereof in three public places within the district, at least five days previous to the time of meeting; but if such meeting shall not be notified within twenty days, as aforesaid, the County Superintendent may give notice of such meeting in the manner provided for forming new districts; and the officers chosen at such special meeting shall hold their offices until the next annual meeting, and until their successors are elected and qualified.

“Sec. 26. The qualified voters at each annual meeting, or at any special meeting duly called, may determine the length of time a public school shall be taught in their district for the ensuing year, and whether such a school shall be

taught by a male or female teacher, or both, and whether the school money to which the district may be entitled shall be applied to the support of the Summer, or Winter term of the school, or a certain portion to each; but if such matter shall not be determined at the annual or any special meeting, it shall be the duty of the District Board to determine the same.

“Sec. 27. The Director of each district shall preside at all district meetings, and shall sign orders drawn by the Clerk, authorized by a district meeting or by the District Board, upon the Treasurer of the district, for moneys collected or received by him to be disbursed therein. He shall appear for and in behalf of the district in all suits brought by or against the district, unless other directions shall be given by the voters of such district at a district meeting.

“Sec. 28. The Clerk of each district shall record the proceedings of his district in a book provided by the district for that purpose, and shall enter therein copies of all reports, made by him to the County Superintendent; and he shall keep and preserve all records, books and papers belonging to his office, and deliver the same to his successor in office.

“Sec. 29. The said Clerk shall be Clerk of all district meetings, when present; but if such Clerk shall not be present at any district meeting, the voters present may appoint a Clerk of such meeting, who shall certify the proceedings thereof, and the same shall be recorded by the Clerk of the district.

“Sec. 30. It shall be the duty of the Clerk to give at least ten days' notice previous to any

annual or special district meeting, by posting up notices thereof at three or more public places in the district, one of which notices shall be affixed to the outer door of the school house, if there be one in the district; and said Clerk shall give the like notice of every adjourned meeting, when such meeting shall have been adjourned for a longer period than one month. Every notice for a special district meeting shall specify the objects for which such meeting is called, and no business shall be acted upon at any special meeting, not specified in said notice.

“Sec. 31. The Clerk of the district shall draw orders upon the Treasurer of the district, for moneys in the hands of such Treasurer, which have been apportioned to or raised by the district to be applied to the payment of teachers’ wages, and apply such money to the payment of teachers’ wages as shall have been employed by the district Board, or by the citizens of the district; and the said Clerk shall draw orders on the said Treasurer for moneys in the hands of such Treasurer, to be disbursed for any other purpose ordered by a district meeting, or by the district Board, agreeably to the provisions of this act.

“Sec. 32. It shall be the duty of the Clerk to make out tax lists of all taxes legally authorized by the district; and annex to such tax lists a warrant under the hand of said Clerk directed to the said Treasurer of said district, requiring said Treasurer to collect the same therein named.

“Sec. 33. The Clerk of each district shall, between the first and twentieth days of Septem-

ber in each year, make out and transmit a report in writing to the County Superintendent of Public Schools showing:

“First: The number of children, male and female, designated separately, residing in the district, or part of district, on the last day of August previous to the date of such report, over the age of four and under the age of twenty-one years.

“Second: The number of children attending school during the year, their sex, and the branches taught.

“Third: The length of time a school has been taught in the district by qualified teacher, the name of the teacher, the length of time taught and the wages paid.

“Fourth: The amount of money received from the County Treasurer within the year, and the manner in which the same has been applied.

“Fifth: The amount of money raised by the district in such year, and the purposes for which it was raised.

“Sixth: The kind of books used in the school, and such other facts and statistics in regard to the district schools as the County Superintendent may require.

“Sec. 34. Whenever a school district shall lie partly in two or more counties, the Clerk of such district, in making his annual report, shall carefully designate the number of children resident in the parts of the counties composing the district, and shall report to the County Superintendent of Common schools of each of the counties in which such district may be situated.

“Sec. 35. The Treasurer shall execute to the district a bond, in double the amount of money, as near as can be ascertained, to come into his hands as Treasurer of the district during the year, with sufficient securities, to be approved by the Director and Clerk, conditioned to the faithful discharge of the duties of said office. Such bond shall be filed with the district Clerk, and in case of the breach of any condition thereof, the Director shall cause a suit to be commenced thereon in the name of the district, and the money collected shall be applied by such Director to the use of the district as the same should have been applied by the Treasurer, and if such Director shall neglect or refuse to prosecute, then any householder of the district may cause such prosecution to be instituted.

“Sec. 36. If the Treasurer shall fail to give bond as required in this act, or from sickness, or any other cause, shall be unable to attend the duties of said office, the District Board shall appoint a Treasurer, who shall possess all the powers of the District Treasurer, and shall, before entering upon the duties of said office, give a bond as the District Treasurer is required to give.

“Sec. 37. The Treasurer of each district shall apply for and receive from the County Treasurer all school money apportioned to his district, and shall collect all district taxes assessed in pursuance of the provisions of this act, and pay over on the order of the Clerk, signed by the Director of such district, all money so received or collected by the said Treasurer.

“Sec. 38. If any District Treasurer shall refuse or neglect to pay over any money in the hands of such Treasurer belonging to the district, it shall be the duty of his successor in office to prosecute without delay, the official bond of such treasurer for the recovery of such money.

“Sec. 39. If, by the neglect of any Treasurer, any school money shall be lost to any school district, which might have been received from the County Treasurer, or collected from the district tax assessed, said Treasurer shall forfeit to such district the full amount of the money so lost.

“Sec. 40. The Treasurer shall present to the district, at each annual meeting, a report in writing, containing a statement of all moneys collected by him from the County Treasurer during the year, from assessments in the district, and the disbursements made, and exhibit the vouchers thereof, which report shall be recorded by the Clerk; and if it shall appear that any balance of money is in his hands at the time of making such report, he shall immediately pay such balance to his successor.

“Sec. 41. The District Board shall purchase or lease such a site for a school house, as shall have been designated by the voters at a district meeting, in the corporate name thereof, and shall build, hire, or purchase such school house, as the voters of the district, in a district meeting, shall have agreed upon, out of the funds provided for that purpose, and make sale of any school house site or other property in the district, and if necessary, execute a conveyance of

the same in the name of their office when lawfully directed by the voters of such district at any regular or special meeting, and shall carry into effect all lawful orders of the district.

“Sec. 42. The District Board shall have the care and keeping of the school house and other property belonging to the district. They shall have power to make such rules and regulations relating to the district library as they may deem proper, and to appoint some suitable person to act as librarian, and to take charge of the school apparatus belonging to the district.

“Sec. 43. The District Board shall have power to admit scholars from adjoining districts, and remove scholars for disorderly conduct in attendance at school.

“Sec. 44. The District Board in each district shall have power to contract with and hire qualified teachers, for and in the name of the district, which contract shall be in writing, and shall specify the wages per week, or month, as agreed upon by the parties, and such contract shall be filed in the district Clerk's office; but no District Board shall have power to hire any person as a teacher, unless such person produce a certificate of qualification signed by the County Superintendent.

“Sec. 45. The District Board shall provide the necessary appendages for the school house, during the time a school is taught therein, and shall keep an account of all expenses thus incurred, and present the same for allowance at any regular district meeting.

“Sec. 46. That all schools established under the provisions of this act, shall at all times be

equally free and accessible to all the children resident therein, over four and under twenty-one years, subject to such regulations as the District Board in each district may prescribe.

“Sec. 47. If a vacancy should occur in any District Board by death, resignation, or otherwise, the County Superintendent shall appoint some suitable person to fill such vacancy.

“Sec. 48. In every school district there shall be taught: orthography, reading, writing, arithmetic, geography and English grammar if desired, during the time school shall be kept, and such other branches of education as may be determined by the District Board.

“Sec. 49. The amount of district tax shall not exceed one and one-half per cent, per annum. It shall be the duty of the Board of Supervisors of each county in this Territory, at the time of making the annual assessment, to levy (in addition to the taxes already authorized by law to be levied) one-fifth of one per cent, on all the taxable property in each county in this Territory, for the support of public schools in each of said counties, to be collected at the time and (in) the manner prescribed by law for the collection of other taxes; said tax, when collected, shall be distributed to the several school districts in each county in proportion to the number of children over four and under twenty-one years of age therein; and shall be drawn from the County Treasury upon the order of the County Superintendent of Public Schools.

“Sec. 50. Said taxes when collected, together with all moneys specially appropriated

by the acts of this and all former Legislatures, for the use and support of public schools in this Territory, shall be paid into the County Treasury, and be drawn out as hereinbefore provided; said fund, so created, shall be known as the Common School Fund, and shall not be paid out for any other purpose, except for the hire and pay of competent teachers.

“Sec. 51. All taxes raised and collected in any school district, for any of the purposes authorized in this act, shall be assessed on the same kind of property as taxes for county purposes are assessed.

“Sec. 52. The Clerk of the school district, in making out any tax list, shall enter therein the names of all persons liable to pay a school tax, the amount of personal property to be taxed to each person, and a description of all taxable real estate in the district, distinguishing that owned by non-residents of the district, and he shall set opposite to each description of taxable property the valuation of the same, and the amount of tax charged upon such property, and to each person respectively, or tract of land owned by non-residents; and such description and valuation of taxable property shall be ascertained, as far as possible, from the last assessment roll of the County.

“Sec. 53. Whenever any real estate in any school district shall not have been separately valued in the assessment roll of the county, and the value of such estate cannot be definitely ascertained from such assessment roll, the District Board of such district shall estimate the

value of the same, and apportion the taxes thereon.

“Sec. 54. The warrant annexed to any tax list, shall be under the hand of the Clerk of the district, and shall command the Treasurer of the district to collect from each of the persons and corporations named in said tax list, the several sums set opposite their names, within forty days from the date thereof, and within twenty days from the time of receiving such warrant to personally demand such tax of the persons charged therewith and residing within his District; and that if any tax shall not be paid within twenty days thereafter, to collect the same by distress and sale of property in the same manner as the county taxes are collected; and the said Treasurer shall execute the said warrant and return the same to the Clerk at the expiration of the time limited therein for the collection of such tax list; provided, that when the owners of property within the district are non-residents, they shall be notified, by the Treasurer, if their place of residence is known, and if within the county they shall make payment within thirty days; if not within the county, but in the Territory, they shall pay within forty days, and if without the Territory they shall make payment within sixty days. Provided, further, that said Treasurer shall be entitled to collect two per cent over and above the sums to be collected in the tax list. And whenever the said Collector shall be compelled to resort to distress and sale of property to obtain any tax, he shall be entitled to, and may take out of the proceeds of such sale, in addition

to the above mentioned fees, the same fees as the County Collector is entitled to under similar circumstances.

“Sec. 55. The warrant issued by the Clerk of any school district, for the collection of any district tax authorized by the provisions of this act, may be executed anywhere within the limits of the county; and such warrants shall have the like force and effect as a warrant issued for the collection of county taxes; and the Treasurer of the district, to whom any such warrants may be delivered for collection of a tax list, shall possess the like powers in the execution of the same as provided by law for the collection of county taxes.

“Sec. 56. Whenever any error may be discovered in any district tax list, the district Board may order any money which may have been improperly collected on such tax list to be refunded, and authorize the Clerk of the district to amend and correct such error in said tax list.

“Sec. 57. Whenever any district tax, lawfully assessed shall be paid by any person on account of any real estate whereof he is only tenant, such tenant may charge and collect of the owner of such estate, the amount of tax so paid by him, unless some agreement to the contrary shall have been made by the tenant.

“Sec. 58. It shall be the duty of the teacher of every district school, to make out and file with the district Clerk at the expiration of each term of school, a full report of the whole number of scholars enrolled, distinguishing between male and female, the average number in daily attendance, the text books used, the branches

taught, and the number of pupils engaged in the study of said branches. Any teacher who shall neglect or refuse to comply with the requirements of this section, shall forfeit the sum of ten dollars to such a school district, at the discretion of the District Board.

“Sec. 59. Every Clerk of a District Board who shall wilfully sign a false report to the County Superintendent of his county, shall be deemed guilty of a misdemeanor, and punished by a fine not exceeding one hundred dollars, or by imprisonment not exceeding three months.

“Sec. 60. Every School District Clerk or Treasurer, who shall neglect or refuse to deliver to his successor in office, all records and books belonging to his office, shall be subject to a fine not exceeding fifty dollars.

“Sec. 61. When any kind of judgment shall be obtained against any school district, the District Board shall levy a tax on the taxable property in the district, for payment thereof; such tax shall be collected as other school district taxes, but no execution shall issue on judgment against a school district.

“62. No school district officer in this act, shall receive any compensation for his services out of the County or School District Fund.

“63. All acts and parts of acts in conflict with the provisions of this act are hereby repealed.”

The word “members” in Sec. 10, is evidently a misprint for “numbers.” Other sections of the act being crudely expressed, the meaning is vague and uncertain, but with all its defects this law was the foundation upon which was

reared the unsurpassed common school system of Arizona.

This Legislature also passed an Act locating the Territorial Prison at or near the town of Phoenix in the county of Yavapai and Territory of Arizona, which act was approved December 7th, 1868. This law was never enforced.

CHAPTER IV.

WHAT CONGRESS DID FOR ARIZONA.

COLLECTION DISTRICT PROPOSED—IMPROVEMENTS
ON COLORADO RIVER INDIAN RESERVATION—
DELEGATE BASHFORD'S SPEECH UPON—DE-
BATE UPON—AMENDMENT TO POSTAL BILL—
DELEGATE BASHFORD'S SPEECH UPON—ACTS
OF THIRD, FOURTH AND FIFTH LEGISLATURES
LEGALIZED — SIXTH LEGISLATURE HELD AT
TUCSON.

At the Congressional Session of 1867-68, Coles Bashford, the Arizona Delegate in Congress, introduced a bill to create a collection district for Arizona, which bill was read the first and second time and referred to the Committee on Ways and Means, where it remained.

On May 29, 1868, an amendment to the Appropriation Bill was introduced by Mr. Windom, reading as follows:

“For completing construction of irrigating canal on the Colorado reservation, breaking and fencing lands, purchase of seeds, teams and tools, construction of agency buildings, subsistence, etc., \$84,500.”

Upon this amendment Mr. Bashford spoke as follows: May 29, 1868.

“Mr. Chairman, I had not intended to say anything upon this amendment proposed by the chairman of the Committee on Indian Affairs. That committee made, so far as they were able, a careful examination into this subject, and although there was not a full attendance, the

members present were unanimously in favor of the amendment now offered. Now, Mr. Chairman, as the representative on this floor of Arizona Territory, I wish to state what I know of the Indians of that country after a residence there of some five years.

“The amendment proposes to bring together some ten thousand Indians who now have no local habitation, no home, and put them upon the reservation. During the discussion upon this bill I have heard a great deal about our Indian policy. It has been argued that the policy pursued by the Government is unwise. But, sir, can any better Indian policy be adopted than that contemplated by this amendment, which is to give the Indians a home, to put them upon a reservation where they can be self-sustaining?

“The principal difficulty in making treaties with the Indians has been that when you have made a treaty, the Indians having no home, you have not been able to enforce it. You cannot punish them when they violate their treaty obligations. But when you put them upon a reservation, where they gather about them their families, their horses, their cattle, where they engage in the cultivation of their fields, they always keep their treaties, because they can be punished when they violate them. Sir, the true Indian policy to be pursued by this Government is to place these Indians upon reservations.

“Now, sir, this canal is some thirty miles long, some nine feet deep, and some twenty feet wide. It will irrigate land enough for all these Indians, and some more—not Indians to be

picked, as the gentleman from Massachusetts has said—but some Indians known as the River Indians, who are friendly when they are properly treated; who have always been friendly as a general rule. And, sir, they have only been hostile as the result of such a policy as is contemplated by this bill without the proposed amendment. Ever since the acquisition of this Indian country by the United States the Government has, through its representatives and agents, held out to these Indians the prospect that they should be placed upon reservations and cared for, as contemplated by this amendment. By failing to carry out this policy, you render the Indians hostile; and sir, I say, not for the purpose of affecting this vote, that the safety of the people of the country would be endangered if these ten or twelve thousand Indians should join hands with the Apaches.

“Upon this reservation all the Indians of that country can be supported and cared for; and instead of being our enemies they will be our friends. We have heretofore raised companies of Indians to fight the Apaches, who have been our foes, stealing our property and murdering our people. I presume that this amendment was not properly presented and pressed before the Committee upon Appropriation, otherwise they would have been in favor of it. I know that it contemplates the only policy which the United States can wisely pursue in regard to the Indians in that far off country.”

Mr. Windom, in support of the amendment, had the clerk read the following:

“Plats of survey for canal are on file in the Indian Bureau. Estimated cost about one hundred and twenty thousand dollars, but by Indian labor can be done for much less. The canal, now already under course of construction, is thirty miles in length, twenty feet wide, with an average depth of about nine feet. When completed will irrigate seventy-five thousand acres of land. The work is being prosecuted by the Indians, who work with a will, and it is confidently expected that the entire work will be completed during the present year, affording a home for ten or twelve thousand Indians, and rendering them in the future entirely self-sustaining. Should this appropriation fail fears are entertained that the labor already performed may be lost by reason of rains and overflow of river. This appropriation is asked also for breaking and fencing lands, building of houses, purchase of seed, agricultural implements, etc.

“There are but two reservations in Arizona—the one on the Colorado river, for which the appropriation is asked, and the Maricopa and Pima reserve on the Gila river. This latter is now self-sustaining, and with an Indian population of six thousand, whose boast is ‘that they do not know the color of the white man’s blood,’ furnishing statistical returns of products of last year amounting to \$200,000, and during the year have furnished corn for supply of contracts to the Government troops in Arizona (Fort Whipple) at a rate one-half less than has ever been furnished heretofore.”

The following debate then took place in regard to this amendment:

MR. WINDOM (Wm. Windom of Minnesota):—"These facts were presented to me by Superintendent Dent. I laid them before a minority of the Committee on Indian Affairs—there were no more present—and they unanimously directed me to offer this amendment. I believe it to be good policy, and that the Government would save money by completing this work, because it would furnish employment to the Indians in the Territory, tending to civilize them, for if they are kept at work, enabled to raise corn, etc., they will be able to take care of themselves, and we would save the cost of keeping a military force there. If this amount, or a portion of it, is not now appropriated, it is said that what has already been appropriated will be lost."

MR. MILLER (George F. Miller of Pennsylvania):—"How much has been already appropriated?"

MR. WINDOM:—"About fifty thousand dollars."

MR. BUTLER (Benjamin F. Butler of Massachusetts):—"I will read to the Committee of the Whole all the information upon this subject which was sent to us by the Secretary of the Interior to justify this appropriation. It is from a letter written by Superintendent Dent, of Arizona Territory:

"Referring to the estimate of \$84,500 for completing the irrigating canal of the Colorado reservation, I again invite your attention to the

insufficiency of the appropriation of \$50,000 current this year to accomplish the whole work.

“The amount above stated, in addition, I think, will complete the ditch, buildings, etc. I trust that you will concur in this sum, and effect its being appropriated.

“Item No. 7, relating to the sum of \$20,000 for maintaining Indians on the reservation that may be turned over by the military, I regard as very important. There can be no reasonable doubt but that the considerable force now engaged against the hostiles will conquer bands or tribes during the coming year, and it is highly proper that they should be immediately brought on the reservation, kept there by force, if necessary, and maintained until they can be made self-sustaining.’

“The proposition, therefore, is to appropriate \$84,000, in addition to the \$50,000 already appropriated, for the purpose of building an irrigating canal for Indians, a large portion of whom are yet to be caught, and brought in and set to work on the land which is to be thus irrigated.”

MR. WINDOM:—“The gentleman is mistaken on that point. There are several tribes of Indians there, two of them the largest in the Territory, I believe. They are now industrious, and have never been at war with the whites at all. Only a portion of the Indians, one tribe, is warlike.”

MR. BUTLER:—“Upon examining the whole matter as well as we could the committee came to the conclusion that this was an expenditure that could wait, and hence struck out the appro-

priation. The gentleman now proposes to put it in.

“I want to call the attention of the committee to the fact that in this bill we appropriate \$35,000 to take care of the Indians of this Territory. According to the official returns there are seven thousand of them. We appropriate \$15,000 to take care of ninety-three hundred and thirty Indians in Idaho. Now, the amendment asks an appropriation to build a canal. A canal nine feet deep, instead of being merely for purposes of irrigation, looks to me like a manufacturing project. Somebody, I imagine, wants to get water power. It is an immense work, and must cost quite a large amount. I think it had better wait a year. The Indians always have been without it, and in my judgment they can live without it another year. I hope the amendment will not prevail.”

The amendment was rejected.

The canal in question was never built. The \$50,000 which was said to have been appropriated before for this purpose was used, just how no one knows, for according to Genung, there was less than one-half a mile of the canal built and the River Indians were never collected upon this reservation. A part of the Mohaves were gathered there, but the most of them were on the war-path in 1868, as will be seen further on in this history.

At this session of Congress an amendment was passed to the postal bill, which bill was entitled “An Act to provide for carrying the mails from the United States to foreign ports, and for

other purposes," approved March 25th, 1864. The fourth section of this law was as follows:

"And be it further enacted, That all mailable matter which may be conveyed by mail westward beyond the western boundary of Kansas, and eastward from the eastern boundary of California, shall be subject to prepaid letter postage rates; Provided, however, That this section shall not be held to extend to the transmission by mail of newspapers from a known office of publication to bona fide subscribers, not exceeding one copy to each subscriber, nor to franked matter to and from the intermediate points between the boundaries above named at the usual rates: Provided further, That such franked matter shall be subject to such regulations as to its transmission and delivery as the Postmaster General shall prescribe."

The bill was first considered in the House and an amendment striking out this section was passed, causing it to take effect immediately. In the Senate this amendment was inserted:

"Strike out all after the enacting clause, and in lieu thereof insert the following:

" 'The operation of the fourth section of an act to provide for carrying the mails of the United States to foreign ports, and for other purposes, approved March 25, 1864, shall cease and determine on and after the 30th day of September, 1868,' " the Senate fixing the time when the amendment should go into effect, as will be seen, on the 30th of September, 1868, when the contracts for carrying the mails would cease. The bill came back, as amended by the Senate, for concurrence in the house. A lively

fight was had upon the amendment. The Chairman of the Committee on Post Office and Post Roads, Mr. Farnsworth of Illinois, endeavored to have it referred to his committee, with the intent, as charged by some of the friends of the bill, upon the floor of the House, to kill the bill. The ensuing debate was participated in by the Delegates from Colorado, Montana and Arizona, and Mr. Ashley, Representative from the State of Nevada, in which it was shown that newspapers only forty and fifty miles from the railroad which was built at that time, had to be sent by express, and cost seventy-five cents a pound; that newspapers printed in San Francisco and in the East were sold at twenty-five cents a copy by the news agents on account of this excessive tariff; that periodicals and magazines were sold at a dollar and a half a copy; that books which cost probably at wholesale by the publishers fifty cents a copy, were sold at two and three dollars. This, it was contended, was a tax upon intelligence. The populations of these Territories, amounting in the aggregate to between two and three hundred thousand people, pioneers in these localities, could not afford reading matter on account of the excessive tariff.

The debate was a long one, and the representative from the State of Nevada, and the Delegates from the Territories affected, were heard. Mr. Bashford, Delegate from Arizona, spoke as follows in favor of the amendment and its immediate passage:

“Mr. Speaker, this bill has been deliberately considered in this House. All the objections

made to it were met at the time when it passed. It was deliberately considered in the Senate, and they put an amendment upon the bill fixing a future day for it to go into operation. No one can object to that except the friends of the bill. Instead of going into effect immediately it is to go into effect at a future day. We make no objection to that. If I understand the chairman of the Committee on the Post Office and Post Roads he does not go back and renew the objections made here at the time the bill was passed, but says that since that time there have been contracts entered into, and this would affect those contracts, and those contractors would come here and charge the Government more than they otherwise would if we should take this restriction off of printed mail matter. Now, this question has been before Congress for the last year and more. This bill was introduced a long time before; and, sir, if it had been desirable, if the Committee on the Post Office and Post Roads had wished this bill to pass, how easy it would have been for them to suspend, by joint resolution, the letting of these contracts until the bill was passed, and then urged the bill through the House, putting our people upon equal footing in all respects with other people of the United States. The pioneers who go into our remote Territories have hardships enough to endure. They have dangers and troubles to meet from the Indians. You have collectors and receivers of public money among us. You make us help bear the burdens of Government, and yet deny us the

right to send newspapers and other printed matter through the mails. I think it would be a great injustice not to pass this at once. I hope, therefore, it will not be referred to the Committee on the Post Office and Post Roads."

As I have said, it was hotly contested by the Committee on the Post Office and Post Roads, but finally the House concurred in the amendment of the Senate, and the bill was passed. Thereafter all printed matter was carried through the mails and not by Wells, Fargo & Company.

Wells, Fargo & Company, upon the building of the Central Pacific, by some agreement with that corporation, took over the exclusive right to forward express matter over their lines, and, therefore, there was an alliance between this corporation and that of the Pacific Railroads which made a strong combination in Congress. It is the first and for many years the only time in Congress when a combination of the Express and Railroad Companies was defeated in any measure they wished to pass.

In 1867 a decision was handed down by Judge Backus declaring that the Third, Fourth and Fifth Legislatures of Arizona were illegal, the apportionment for which was made by the Governor instead of by the Legislature, as required by the Organic Act. This decision threw everything into confusion. Laws passed during these sessions and criminals convicted, were all declared illegal, and Congress was called upon and did, in the session of 1869-70, pass a bill, legalizing the action of these Legislatures. There was

no Territorial Legislature called here in 1869, for the reason that Mr. McCormick, the Governor, was elected to Congress and took his seat in 1868, while his successor, Gov. Safford, did not arrive in the Territory until after the time had elapsed for the calling of the Legislature, and the Secretary for some reason or other failed to do so.

The next Legislature of Arizona was held in 1871 at Tucson, and thereafter sessions were held biennially instead of annually.

CHAPTER V.

EXPLORATIONS AND SURVEYS.

KANSAS PACIFIC RAILWAY'S EXPEDITION FOR
SOUTHERN RAILWAY TO PACIFIC COAST—
STORY OF BY WILLIAM A. BELL—FORT
BOWIE—MURDERS BY AND ADVENTURES
WITH THE INDIANS.

In the spring of 1867 the Kansas Pacific Railway Company organized a very extensive surveying expedition to determine upon the best route for a southern railway to the Pacific Coast through Kansas, Colorado, New Mexico, Arizona, and the southern part of California. Until the Rio Grande del Norte, about equidistant from the Mississippi and the Pacific, was reached, three separate surveying parties were employed, but between that river and the Pacific coast there were no less than five parties, each equipped to make an accurate instrumental survey across that part of the continent by different routes on different parallels of latitude. For this expedition the United States Government furnished escorts and transportation and other assistance, without which the undertaking, at that time, would have been impossible, for most of the Indian tribes were at war with the whites.

These expeditions were under the general charge of General W. W. Wright, who continued in personal charge of them until they reached the Rio Grande, when he returned to Denver to make reports to his principals, and

left the completion of the surveys in the hands of General W. J. Palmer.

At Fort Craig the several parties were re-organized, their numbers increased, and their escorts doubled preparatory to exploring the difficult country lying to the westward. From the Rio Grande to the Colorado of the West, and thence across the desert, or Great Basin, as it was commonly called, into California, the parties surveyed and examined two entirely different districts, lying parallel to each other but separated by lofty mountains and tablelands, and distant from each other only about two degrees. One party, consisting of three bodies of surveyors, passed into California through the Moqui country and northern Arizona, a country famous for its wild and beautiful scenery and studded over with the ruins of an extinct population. This was along the 35th parallel and had been explored by Whipple, in 1854-5, and afterwards by Lieutenant Beale in 1858. It is known as the 35th parallel route across the continent, and the survey made by these parties was afterwards used in the construction of the Santa Fe and Atlantic & Pacific Railroads through Arizona.

The other part of the expedition, consisting of two surveying parties, descended the Rio Grande valley for a distance of seventy-two miles below Fort Craig before turning westward. They then explored the barren districts lying between the Rio Gila and the boundary of Mexico, this route being known as the 32d parallel route. The route laid out by this expedition was somewhat changed in the construc-

tion of the road later by the Southern Pacific Company.

An account of these surveys is contained in a book printed in London, England, in 1870, entitled "New Tracks in North America," by William A. Bell, who started out as photographer for one of the parties and afterwards became physician and surgeon for the party.

The story of Mr. Bell is one of absorbing interest. It gives in detail many camp scenes and also tells of the difficulties encountered in prosecuting the survey at that time. His account of the arrival of the expedition at Fort Bowie, and what happened there is as follows:

"Fort Bowie is situated about six miles up the pass. It consists of a small collection of adobe houses, built on the summit of a hill, which rises as a natural lookout station in the centre of the defile, and commands the road both ways for two or three miles of its length. The only officers at the time of our visit were Lieutenant Carrol, Lieutenant Hubbard, and the resident surgeon; the only troops, one small company of forty men. The officers insisted upon Lawson, Colton, and myself sharing their quarters; they had not had a visitor of any kind for months, and had almost forgotten that the world was inhabited.

"After luncheon I strolled out upon a higher hilltop to choose a good position for taking a photograph of the fort and pass. The view was a very beautiful one, for we were hemmed in on all sides by lofty mountains, the most conspicuous of which is Helen's Dome. Some two miles distant in the pass, the sheep and oxen



Apache Pass from Fort Bowie in 1868.

belonging to the fort were peacefully grazing, when suddenly I perceived a commotion amongst the garrison. All were hurrying to the highest part and looking towards the cattle, from which direction I heard a few shots fired. It appeared on inquiry that the mail carrier, going west to Tucson, had only gone on his way a short distance past the cattle, just beyond the turning in the road which hid him from the fort, when he suddenly came upon two Indians who were stealthily creeping up towards the stock. Shots were exchanged, and he immediately turned back to give the alarm to the men guarding the cattle, and to the sentinels at the fort. The Indians showed themselves two or three times in the open, and then disappeared. It was useless for us, with our wearied horses, to join in the chase after a couple of naked red men, so we remained behind.

“So poorly supplied was this little fort, if such a term may be applied to a collection of mud huts, that two horses represented the entire stock. It was customary to keep one of them with the herd and the other in the stable, and the favorite chestnut of the lieutenant’s, a high mettled, splendid creature, happened this day to be at home. It was immediately saddled. Carrol was quite young; he had only seen eighteen summers, and looked even younger, for his hair was very fair, and he had not the least tinge of whisker on his smooth cheeks. I remember watching him spring with one bound from the ground into his saddle, wave his hand merrily to us, and then dash down the steep winding road which led from the fort to the pass below.

Again we saw him racing as fast as the horse could gallop along the pass after the mail carrier, who, being previously mounted, had started off with the infantry. I went back to my photography, for there were many views I wished to obtain; but my friend, Lieutenant Lawson, could not remain long inactive. He was a great character. Although very short, quite grey with years, and not in the least like a military man, he was the gamest little fellow I ever met. So fond of soldiering did he become during the war, that he could not settle down again to business. Though one of the steadiest of men, and a religious man also, a great rarity out West, he actually left his good wife and family comfortably settled at Cincinnati, changed his social position from wholesale hardware merchant and ex-colonel of volunteers to simple lieutenant in the regular army, and started to join a Western regiment. The merest chance of a brush with the Indians was irresistible; so he ordered out his six men and their six jaded horses, and off they went down the winding road, and then away out of sight along the pass.

“As the afternoon went by most of the infantry returned by twos and threes, and we were just sitting down to dinner when Lieutenant Lawson and his men rode into the fort. They had hunted about all over the mountain and through the ravines, but had encountered no savages, nor even caught a glimpse of a red-skin. Carrol, to our surprise, was not with them. We made inquiries, and found that all had reported themselves except the lieutenant and the mail carrier. We questioned those who

had gone the furthest, and a shepherd just back from over the hills; these agreed that they had heard the distant report of firearms, coming apparently from the western plain. This was the direction the two redskins had taken. So we saddled our horses without a moment's delay, and, with sickening forebodings in our hearts, started across the mountains to the western plain. We scrambled up the base of Helen's Dome, which was so steep as almost to baffle our horses, well trained as they were to all sorts of bad places; then, after skirting the side for some distance, we crossed a ravine to another mountain slope, down which we plunged, over large blocks of limestone and marble, leading our horses by the bridles, and clambering through them as best we could. Every moment was precious, for the sun had almost set before we reached the plain.

"Then we spread out in line, nine in number; for there was no enemy in sight, and our only hope was to strike the trail; for we knew they must have passed somewhere in this direction. Every eye was fixed on the ground, every blade of grass was closely scanned; our souls were in our eyes. At last one marked 'pony tracks'; then another called out, 'This way they lead'; not two, three or four tracks, but many; perhaps a dozen. The white men had evidently followed too far in pursuit, and falling into an ambuscade, had been cut off from their comrades. Most of the hoofprints were naked, but two set were shod. These were certainly those of the missing horses. We could not hurry on very rapidly without losing the trails, and yet

there was not half an hour's daylight. For three miles farther we pressed on, carefully tracking our way. We passed a spot much trampled down and blood-stained. Here the poor fellows had made a stand; had probably tried to cut their way back through their enemies, who were driving them from the fort. A little further, and all hope of one life was gone. The mail carrier lay stretched upon the open plain—scalped, naked, and mutilated—in the setting sun. This poor man wore whiskers, and the savages produced even a more startling effect than usual by scalping one of them. Thus half of the face was stripped of skin, and the bleeding muscles were laid bare.

“We could not stop a moment; but, dragging up two huge maguay plants to mark the spot, we followed the pony tracks. The sun sank, and it was only by the red glare thrown up from behind the horizon, and reflected by the bare mountains of rock to the east of us, that we were able to track our way. So difficult was it at last that we began to despair of ever learning the fate of poor Carrol. We longed to see his dead body; for the idea of his being taken alive to be tortured and roasted over a slow fire, whilst the fiends danced around him, and exulted over his agony, was the one dread consummation which made our blood run cold. No one spoke, for we all knew that such would be his fate if that sun had not shone upon his corpse.

“As we took a last searching look over the dimly lighted plain in front of us, we saw an object move slightly on the grass. We quickly rode towards it, and in half a mile further we

found that it was the faithful dog of the lieutenant. He was guarding the stiff and lifeless body of his master. So we wrapped the naked body in a saddle cloth and tied it on a horse.

“But for the moon we should not have found the spot where the mail carrier lay. We placed him also on another horse, and then turned our faces towards the pass. The wolves were already gathering around the spot, and the night winds were blowing up cold and chill. The night before, that same beautiful moon which now shone peacefully down upon us, had lighted us through the noble gorge in the Peloncello Mountains, while we sang choruses and enjoyed the grandeur of the scene. This night she lighted us through another gorge, in another range of mountains—Apache Pass—but how different were our feelings as slowly we marched in mournful silence over the nine miles which led up to the fort! Thus ended the 5th of November.

“Next morning we buried the poor fellows in the little graveyard amongst the mountains. The doctor read the burial service, and Lieutenants Hubbard, Colton, Lawson, and myself were the chief mourners. When the final volley had been fired over our two poor comrades, and I turned to glance at the tablets of their companions, I read on the wooden crosses over every grave but one, the same sad story of their fate—

“‘KILLED BY THE APACHES.’

“When Cachees’ six best warriors were wantonly hanged five years before, that bold chief-

tain vowed that for every one of his lost comrades, a hundred white men should die by the hands of himself and his band. Two more scalps were thus added to the long strings of those which already hung from the belts of the Chiricahui braves."

On the northern route, also, the parties there came into frequent contact with the Apaches, one of which, General Palmer's account of his own personal experience, I give below:

"Camp in Signal Canyon.

Eastern Foot of Mogollon Range,

Near San Francisco Mountain,

Arizona, Dec. 8, 1867.

"After climbing and scrambling among these mountains for more than two weeks since leaving Prescott, endeavoring to find a route eastward to the Colorado Chiquito without passing over San Francisco Mountain, I have at last reached the valley of that river, and am waiting here in camp this pleasant December Sunday for the return of Hinchman, whom I have sent down the river to get news if possible of Greenwood's whereabouts. Hinchman will probably find a mound there with a letter buried, containing an account of Greenwood's movements, and stating where we can find him. We have two signal fires burning on the highest points overlooking our camp to guide Hinchman to us, and from this we have called the tributary of Canyon Diablo in which we are encamped, 'Signal Canyon.' I have called it a camp, but it is only a 'high toned' bivouac, as we parted

with tents and wagons a fortnight ago, and since that time have relied on pack mules, and even these have been unable to cross the rugged country through which this reconnaissance has been made without sacrificing some of their number to the good of the cause.

“Last Monday, for instance, at the close of the day, while following an old Indian trail across one of the Mogollon ranges, suddenly, without the least previous indication, there yawned at our feet one of those fearful chasms—the terror of all tired travelers, when they think a few more miles of gentle march will bring them to a good camping spot—which are here one of the great characteristics of the country. If ‘unexpectedness’ be one of the elements of romantic grandeur in scenery, this gulf of brown and grey rock has high claims for pre-eminence in this respect, with its precipitous sides, 500 feet deep, and apparently so narrow that it is first difficult to appreciate fully the hard fact that, before you can continue your march, it is absolutely necessary to descend to the very bottom, and then, if you can, to ascend on the other side. Perhaps days would have to be consumed in heading the inexorable channel. There is no help for it, and although the tall spruce trees in the bed look like saplings, and the stream of water rushing along among great boulders resembles a thread, and your head swims as you gaze down from the brink, the course lies east—northeast; and where none but the Apache has ever gone down before, and he on foot, you have to lead your horse, jumping out of his way when he slips and slides on the

bare rock, and dodging the loose boulders which are rolled down by the column following you.

“It is assumed in this country that wherever an Indian has made a foot trail a pack mule can follow. We expected to come across many such paths, and, after our previous experience, would have been much surprised had we not met some of the trail makers as well as their trails. In the ascent of this canyon by which we are camped there was considerable difficulty. One strong mule, having nearly reached the top, slipped and rolled over and over till he reached the bottom—dead. Another tumbled nearly as far, but must have had a very steady and well ordered brain, as the moment he struck the river bed below, he stood upon his feet, and has made a day’s march with us since; but we had to shoot him yesterday. A third tumbled half-way down, and is an ugly spectacle, with his gashed eye and flank, but is marching along all right now, doing regular service.

“But very few days have passed since leaving Prescott in which we did not meet recent signs of Indians; the rude wigwams of bunch grass and branches, which the Arizonians call ‘wicky-ups’; the moccasin tracks, the mescal heaps, where the Indian has been roasting his supply of winter subsistence, composed almost entirely of this root; the sweating house or earth oven, which he gets into when sick, and which is almost his sole remedy for disease; the fresh trail, and the ‘rancheria,’ or village of a greater or less number of wigwams.

“We have been surrounded by these constantly, but all were abandoned; and although

the stealthy Apache was watching us from every rocky lookout, we could nowhere catch sight of him. An inexperienced traveler would have imagined that there had been a general exodus, and that the whole race had disappeared—had gone to the Tonto basin, or the Gila, or some remote hiding-place.

“If he wanted to have this mistake corrected, he should have done as we did; he should have gone down into a canyon and traveled along its bed for a few miles, until he had reached a place where you can look up on either side and not discover the remotest chance of getting out—where ahead, and in the rear, as far as you can see, it looks like a deep grey coffin. Then suddenly he would hear a war-whoop that would make him think that all the savages in the Rocky Mountains, from Fort Bridger to Apache Pass, were within bow and arrow range.

“A week or two ago, on an occasion very similar to the above, General Gregg was with me. We were hunting for a route from the Val de Chino, eastward to the Colorado Chiquito, by crossing the headwaters of the streams flowing into the Rio Verde close up to where they emerged from the high rocky wall at the base of the San Francisco Mountains, when we came to the canyon of Sycamore Fork. We succeeded in descending the gorge; but the ascent was so exceedingly steep, that we thought the pack train could not climb up out of it; and concluded, in spite of its violating the fundamental rule of Indian warfare in these mountains, to return to the bed of the canyon and follow it to its mouth.

“It was strewn with fragments of red sandstone, from the size of a church to that of a pebble, over which we dragged our footsore animals very slowly. We had made some eight miles when, as it seemed, at the roughest part of the whole way, where nature had made a sort of waste closet at random for all the shapeless blocks and sharp-cornered masses of rock and washed out boulders that she had no time to work up and wished to hide from sight, we suddenly heard a shot from the brink of the canyon at our rear, and the dreaded war-whoop burst upon us. Then we looked up to the right and left, ahead and to the rear; but the walls seemed everywhere as tall as a church-steeple, with scarcely a foot hold from top to base. They had looked high before, and the chasm narrow, but now it seemed as though we were looking up from the bottom of a deep well or a tin mine, and no bucket to draw us up by. Soon the shots were repeated, and the yells were followed by showers of arrows. We staggered and stumbled, about as fast as a very slow ox team, along the rocky bed, till we came to some bushes, and then stopped.

“Some of the Indians had got on the edge of the canyon ahead of us, whose yells answered those from the rear; and the whole concatenation of sounds echoed among the cliffs till it seemed to us that every rancheria in Arizona had poured out its dusky warriors to overwhelm us.

“It was a yell of triumph—of confidence. It appeared to say, ‘Oh, ye wise and boastful white men, with your drilled soldiers and re-

peating guns, and wealth and power, who came out to hunt the poor Indian from his wigwam, look where we have got you! We have only been waiting for you to make some blunder; now we shall take advantage of it, and not let any of you escape. It shall be worse than at Fort Kearney, for not even *one* shall be spared to tell the story. It will be a good place to bury you; in fact, you are already buried in as deep a grave as you could wish. We shall only leave you there, that is all. Ha! ha! What are your Spencer carbines worth, and your soldiers with their fine uniforms and drill? It is only the old lesson we are teaching you; our forefathers taught it to Braddock, and it has been repeated many times since; but we shall drive it into you deeper than ever it has been before, ha! ha! You thought we had all gone, but our eyes were never off you; and now we are gathering our warriors from every hiding place. This is the way we call them out—whoop! whoop! and they are lining the edge of the canyon before and behind you. You can take your time. It is only ten miles to the mouth; and the farther you go the deeper the canyons get. Perhaps you wish to retreat? It is only eight miles back, and you know what sort of a path it is. From the cedars on the brink we will pick you off at our leisure, and you shall not see one of us. This country belongs to us—the whole of it; and we do not want your people here, nor your soldiers, nor your railroad. Get away to where you belong—if you can, ha! ha!’

“It was not all this in detail, but the sum and

concentration of it, that flashed through my mind as I listened to those yells, now rising clear and wild on the breeze, and now dying away in the distance.

“We moved close up to the foot of the wall, from the top of which the shots came, thinking it would be too steep for them to hit us; but the great rocks that came rolling down upon us, resounding almost like heavy ordnance through the canyon, drove us away from the slight shelter. Here was a new danger, and a very serious one, since there was no hope that this kind of ammunition would give out, and the Indians evidently knew how to use it.

“ ‘Now, officers, be quick and sharp in giving your orders! Throw away precedent and drill, and come down to native common sense!’ ‘Now, soldiers, be prompt, and jump at the word of command, and don’t get disheartened! And, you, muleteers; scatter out your animals, keep them sheltered as much as possible, and avoid all disorder. Now, everybody keep cool, for every man’s life hangs upon a single movement here; and if a panic breaks out, all is lost, and the latest tragedy in the great Apache war, which they say has been waging against the Spaniards and Americans for over two hundred years, will have been enacted!’ Soon the sharp clear voice of the adjutant rang out from behind a huge rock in the channel, his carbine at a ‘ready,’ and without moving his eyes from the cliff— ‘Sergeant, send six men to scale that side of the canyon!’

“As they moved out, General Gregg joined them and directed their movement.

“I gave the next order to the little escort I had brought from New Mexico: ‘Sergeant Miller, station five men on this side of the canyon to cover that scaling party with their fire. Let them take shelter behind the rocks.’ This was done, and the devoted little band began slowly to ascend what seemed an almost vertical wall of sandstone.

“Until now, although the yells had rung all around us, the firing was confined to the west side of the canyon, but at this moment a very close shot was fired from the other side, and our plans could not be carried out unless this was stopped. Another scaling party of six men was accordingly detailed, of which I took command, and began ascending the eastern cliff, covered by the fire of a second small party in the canyon. This disposed of all our fighting force, the remainder being required to take care of the animals. How we got up, God knows; I only remember hearing a volley from below, shots from above, Indian yells on all sides, the grating roar of tumbling boulders as they fell, and the confused echoing of calls and shouts from the canyon. Exhausted, out of breath, and wet with perspiration, boots nearly torn off, and hands cut and bleeding, I sat down on the summit and looked around. Across the narrow chasm I saw the other scaling party. Everything was as quiet as death, the Indians had disappeared—melting away as suddenly and mysteriously as they had at first appeared. They had gone to their hidden lairs, cowed by our determined approach.

“It had been hurriedly arranged before we ascended, that the scaling parties should move on down stream at the brink of the canyon, covering the pack train and animals which would march along the bed. Accordingly we moved on towards the Rio Verde; but, in consequence of side canyons, were compelled to keep back at least half a mile nearer to the foot of the mountain than the course of the canyon.

“Six miles further, while skirting a ridge which projected from the mountain, the Indians from the top began yelling again like demons, and firing at us, but the range was too long to do any harm. They were too cowardly to attack even our small party, and now that we were no longer engulfed in a canyon, we laughed at their whoops. They followed us, however, hoping to catch us in a ravine, but we always sent three men across first to cover the rest and be covered by them in turn.

“Just as the sun was setting we recognized from a high point the mouth of the Sycamore and the valley of the Rio Verde. We had not been able, from the roughness of the country, to approach the side of the canyon in which we supposed the rest of the party were moving, and could not, therefore, ascertain their whereabouts. But at last, toward dark, we descended a second time, by a deep side gorge, into the canyon, dropping down fully 2,000 feet in the space of half an hour. It was just light enough when we reached the bed of the main canyon to discover that our party had not passed down it, and although fearful lest the Apaches should

notice our descent and again pepper us in the narrow ravine, we turned up it to meet them.

“That night’s march up the canyon, over the broken rocks and through the tangled thickets, was worse, if anything, than the attack. Every pebble in the darkness was magnified to a boulder, and every boulder seemed as large as a house; fording the rapid stream twenty times, we shivered with cold and wet when we halted for a brief rest; expecting every moment to meet our party encamped, we yet wondered how they would dare to stop in such a place. Finally, near midnight, we halted under some sheltering rocks, and concluded to take some sleep; but the guides protested against having a fire, saying the Indians would detect and shoot into it. To sleep without one, however, was impossible. At last I concluded that it was better to die from an Indian arrow than to freeze to death in the darkness, and ordered a small one to be lighted, beside which we sat and slept and shivered until a little before daylight, when we took another smoke for breakfast and pushed out into the darkness to continue our march up the stream.

“During the night a great rock had either become dislodged or had been rolled down by Indians, but it fell into the canyon with a report like thunder. I started up and found I had not dreamt it. I would give something to have a faithful picture of that little party, with the expression of each as they stood or leaned, staring out into the pitch dark canyon, and wondering what would come next.

“By daybreak we had got well on our way; when we heard shots in the rear, which we presumed to be Indians firing into our abandoned camp. We commended ourselves for early rising and pushed on, wondering what could have become of General Gregg’s party. Finally, the guides insisted on getting out of the canyon and striking towards Prescott, but I ordered them to keep ahead, feeling confident that we should soon meet the party or its trail.

“At last all hope seemed to be gone, and I agreed to climb out up the western cliff. It was as much as we could do to reach the top, and imagine our feelings on arriving there to find that we were merely on a vertical ledge of rock, and that immediately on the other side was the same canyon we had come along an hour before. We scrambled along the narrow ledge, however, faint from hunger and fatigue, having come nearly twenty miles on foot, up and down canyons and steep ravines, climbing through mountain passes and stumbling over the rocky bed of the streams—equivalent to at least sixty miles, as we thought, on a level road. We had had nothing to eat for over twenty-four hours, and very little sleep; the night was bitterly cold, our overcoats were left behind when we scaled the cliff during the Indian attack, and we had nothing to comfort us but a ‘Tucson blanket’ each, which scant covering can scarcely be interpreted in genteel society.

“Such was our condition when one of the party cried out, ‘What is that smoke?’ I got out my fieldglass, and saw two fires, and some

animals grazing contentedly on a distant hill. 'That is camp, boys! Orderly, fire two shots in quick succession!' The shots were fired. Anxiously we listened for the acknowledgment. It came soon—the two welcome answering shots, and we strode on with renewed hearts.

"Now, if we had not seen camp, I could have walked as many miles as we had already gone without giving up, but when I came within two miles of camp, and felt certain of succor, and could talk with General Gregg across a deep canyon, only half a mile distant, my legs, somehow, or other, refused to carry me further, and I came to the conclusion that infantry service was disagreeable on an empty stomach. So I made a fire and laid down to sleep, and sent for rations, which my faithful servant, George, brought out to me in the rain, with a flask of whisky from General Gregg, and strict injunctions to be sure to drink it all—a command I promptly obeyed. I hope the Temperance Society will forgive me, as I could have drunk a demijohn under the circumstances without being affected by it.

"It was by no means a short walk even from where we were to General Gregg's camp, as we had to head the deep side canyon, and to cross several others near their sources. It was raining, and the ground and rocks were slippery; but at last we arrived and received the gratulations of the party, who had heard the Indian shots and shouts, and feared we had met too many of the 'noble reds.'

"General Gregg had found a way out of the Sycamore Canyon along a horrible trail, by un-

loading his pack mules and making several trips of it. He had signaled to us, but had no means of communication, and supposed we had struck for Camp Lincoln, a military post in the valley of the Verde fifty miles to the south.

“My noble gray horse, Signor, is gone. He had helped to carry me faithfully from Santa Fe through New Mexico, and thus far into Arizona, but he has fallen a martyr to the topography of the sources of the Rio Verde. While George was leading him up a precipitous path he lost his footing in jumping over a rock, and tumbled to the bottom of the canyon, 100 feet, killing himself instantly. My other valuable horse, Don, whom I intend to take home if I get him safely to the Pacific, had just scrambled over the same obstruction without stumbling. It was nothing less than a miracle that nobody was hurt. These Indians are poor shots, which, with the scarcity of guns among them, must account for our escape. They are afraid also of our ‘heap firing guns’ as they call the Spencers.

“A little experience of this sort, occasionally, is not without use. It enables you to determine a number of nice problems which otherwise might never have been solved, to say nothing of the new phases in which it exhibits the character of your comrades; the test of their true heartedness, their pluck, perseverance, and generosity. There are also some important minor questions to which it supplies accurate solutions. For instance, how would a man ever know whether a smooth boulder of lava or a flat sandstone slab would make the best pillow, until

such occasions had induced him to test the matter practically at frequent intervals during the same night? And how could he ever ascertain the durability of a pair of Santa Fe boots under active service, until a trial of this kind had placed it forcibly before his observation? And while he might hitherto have had a theoretical appreciation of the value and excellence of a slice of fat pork with 'hard tack' for dessert, it is doubtful whether he would ever comprehend the essential sweetness and delicacy of these dishes until, after twenty-four hours' fasting, he had watched with a fieldglass across a canyon until they should start out toward him from a camp two miles distant."

CHAPTER VI.

EXPLORATIONS AND SURVEYS (Continued).

PASSAGE THROUGH GRAND CANYON OF JAMES WHITE, PROSPECTOR—PERSONNEL OF PROSPECTING PARTY — ATTACKED BY INDIANS — PART OF PARTY KILLED—MAKING OF RAFT BY WHITE AND ONE COMPANION—VOYAGE THROUGH CANYON — WHITE'S COMPANION DROWNED — WHITE CONTINUES ALONE — EXPERIENCE WITH INDIANS — ARRIVAL AT CALLVILLE.

One of the most interesting stories contained in this book (New Tracks in North America), is an account of the passage of James White down the Grand Canyon of the Colorado upon a raft. It was written up by one of the surveying party from statements made to him by White, and, as he was the first man who ever descended the Colorado from its source to Callville, below the Canyon, it is worthy of reproduction here:

“Twenty years ago the trapper and hunter were the romantic characters of the Far West. They still figure in fiction, and there is a fascination about their daring deeds which, in America, makes Boone a household name, and throws an air of chivalry, seldom to be felt now-a-days, around the exploits of such men as Carson, Crockett, and Williams. Nor is our admiration for these hardy men undeserved; they have trapped on every Western stream, and hunted



Looking into the First Granite Gorge, Grand Canyon, Foot of Bright Angel Trail.

Including marble Canyon division, this gorge is nearly 300 miles long.

Total depth between 5000 and 6000 feet.

on every mountainside, despite the opposition of the Indian and the barrier of winter snows. They have been the skirmish line of that great army of occupation which is daily pushing westward, and they have taught the savage to respect the white man's courage and to fear the white man's power.

“While the field for the trapper and hunter has been gradually growing less, another class of adventurers has come into existence—the ‘prospectors’ in search of precious metals. Within the last nineteen years these men have traversed every mountain slope, from the rugged peaks of British Columbia to the rich plateaux of Old Mexico; and have searched the sands of every stream from the Mississippi to the shores of the Pacific, stimulated by the same hope of reward that led the early Spaniards to explore places, still unsettled, in their search for an ‘El Dorado.’ Could the varied and adventurous experience of these searchers for gold be written we should have a record of daring and peril that no fiction could approach, and the very sight of gold would suggest to our minds some scene of startling tragedy, some story of hair-breadth escape. Could we but gather and set down in proper form the geographical knowledge possessed by these men, we should know as much of the western wilds as we now do of the long settled portions of the American continent.

“It has fallen to the lot of one of these prospectors to be the hero of an adventure more thrilling than any heretofore recorded, while, at the same time, he has solved a geographical problem which has long attracted the attention

of the learned at home and abroad, who could but theorize before his voyage as to the stupendous chasms or canyons through which the Colorado cleaves its course.

“James White, our hero, now lives at Callville, Arizona Territory, the present head of navigation on the Colorado River. His home is in Kenosha, Wisconsin. He is thirty-two years of age, and in person is a good type of the Saxon; being of medium height and heavy build, with light hair and blue eyes. He is a man of average intelligence, simple and unassuming in his manner and address, and without any of the swagger or bravado peculiar to the majority of frontier men. Like thousands of our own young men, well enough off at home, he grew weary of the slow but certain method of earning his bread by regular employment at a stated salary. He had heard of men leaping into wealth at a single bound in the Western gold-fields, and for years he yearned to go to the land where fortune was so lavish of her favors.

“He readily consented then to be one of a party from his neighborhood who, in the spring of 1867, started for the plains and the goldfields beyond. When they left Fort Dodge, on the Arkansas River, April 13th, 1867, the party consisted of four men, of whom Captain Baker, an old miner and ex-officer in the Confederate Army, was the acknowledged leader. The destination of this little party was the San Juan valley west of the Rocky Mountains, about the gold fields of which prospectors spoke in the most extravagant terms, stating that they were only deterred from working the rich placers of

the San Juan by fear of the Indians. Baker and his companions reached Colorado 'city,' at the foot of Pike's Peak, lat. 38° , in safety. This place was, and is still, the depot for supplying the miners who work the diggings scattered through South Park, and is the more important for being situated at the entrance of Ute Pass, through which there is a wagon road crossing the Rocky Mountains, and descending to the plateau beyond. The people of Colorado 'city' tried to dissuade Baker from what they considered a rash project, but he was determined to carry out the original plan. These representations, however, affected one of the men so much that he left the party, and the others, Captain Baker, James White, and Henry Strole, completed their outfit for their prospecting tour.

"The journey was undertaken on foot, with two pack mules to carry the provisions, mining tools, and the blankets they considered necessary for the expedition. On the 25th of May they left Colorado 'city,' and crossing the Rocky Mountains, through the Ute Pass, they entered South Park, being still on the Atlantic slope of the continent. Ninety miles brought them across the Park to the Upper Arkansas, near the Twin Lakes. They then crossed the Snowy Range, or Sierra Madre, and descended towards the Pacific. Turning southwest, they passed around the head waters of the Rio Grande del Norte, and after a journey of 400 miles, they reached in safety the Animas, the most northern branch of the San Juan river, which flows into the Great Colorado from the east.

“They were now in the land where their hopes centered, and to reach which they had crossed plains and mountains, and forded rapid streams, leaving the nearest abodes of the white man hundreds of miles to the east. Their prospecting for gold began in the bed of the Animas, and though they were partially successful, the result did not by any means reach their expectations; so they followed down the stream into the main valley of the San Juan. There was gold there, but not in the quantity they expected; so they gradually moved west, along the beautiful valley, for 200 miles, when they found that the San Juan entered a deep and gloomy canyon. To avoid this they forded the river to the right bank, and struck across a rough timbered country, directing their course towards the Great Colorado.

“Having traveled through this rough country for a distance estimated at fifty miles, they reached Grand River, being still above the junction of Green river, the united waters of which two streams form the Colorado proper. At the point where they struck the river it was hemmed in by cliffs of perpendicular rock, down which they could gaze at the coveted water, dashing and foaming two thousand feet below. Men and animals were suffering for water, so they pushed up the stream along the rocky uneven canyon wall, hoping to find a place where they could descend to the river. After a day spent in clambering over and around the huge rocks that blocked their way, they came upon a side canyon, which they succeeded in descend-

ing with their animals, and where they obtained the water of which all stood so much in need.

“On the night of the 23rd of August they encamped at the bottom of the canyon, where they found plenty of fuel, and grass in abundance for their animals. As they sat around the camp fire they lamented their failure in the San Juan country, and Strole began to regret that they had undertaken the expedition. But Baker, who was a brave, sanguine fellow, spoke of *placeres* up the river about which he had heard, and promised his companions that all their hopes should be realized, and that they should return to their homes to enjoy the gains and laugh at the trials of their trip. So glowingly did he picture the future, that his companions even speculated as to how they should spend their princely fortunes when they returned to the States. Baker sang songs of home and hope, and the others lent their voices to the chorus till, far into the night, they sank to sleep unguarded, to dream of coming opulence, and to rise refreshed for the morrow’s journey.

“Early next morning they breakfasted, and began the ascent of the side canyon up the opposite bank to that by which they had entered it. Baker was in the advance with his rifle slung at his back, gaily springing up the rocks towards the table lands above. Behind him came White; Strole, with the mules, brought up the rear. Nothing disturbed the stillness of the beautiful summer morning but the tramping of the mules and the short heavy breathing of the climbers. They had ascended but half

the distance to the top, when stopping for a moment to rest, suddenly the war-whoop of a band of savages rang out, sounding as if every rock had a demon's voice. Simultaneously with the first whoop a shower of arrows and bullets was poured into the little party. With the first fire Baker fell against a rock, but, rallying for a moment, he unslung his carbine and fired at the Indians, who now began to show themselves in large numbers, and then, with the blood flowing from his mouth, he fell to the ground. White, firing at the Indians as he advanced and followed by Strole, hurried to the aid of his wounded leader. Baker, with an effort, turned to his comrades and said with his last breath, 'Back boys, back! save yourselves; I am dying.' To the credit of White and Strole be it said, they faced the savages and fought until the last tremor of the powerful frame told them that Baker was dead.

"Then slowly they began to retreat, followed by the exultant Indians, who, stopping to strip and mutilate the dead body in their path, gave the white men a chance to secure their animals, and retrace their steps into the side canyon, beyond the immediate reach of the Indians' arrows. Here they held a hurried consultation. To the east, for 300 miles, stretched an uninhabited country, over which, if they attempted to escape in that direction, the Indians, like bloodhounds, would follow their track. North, south, and west, was the Colorado with its tributaries, all flowing through deep chasms across which it would be impossible for men or animals to travel. Their deliberations were

necessarily short, and resulted in a decision to abandon the animals—first securing their arms, a small stock of provisions, and the ropes or lariats of the mules. Through the descending side canyon they travelled due west for four hours, and emerged at last on a low strip of bottom-land on Grand River, above which, for 2,000 feet on either bank, the cold grey walls rose to block their path, leaving to them but one avenue for escape—the dashing currents of the river.

“They found considerable quantities of drift wood along the banks from which they collected enough to enable them to construct a raft capable of floating themselves, with their arms and provisions. This raft consisted of three sticks of cottonwood, about ten feet in length and eight inches in diameter, lashed firmly together with their lariats. Procuring two stout poles with which to guide the raft, and fastening the bag of provisions to the logs, they waited for midnight to come with the waning moon, so as to drift off unnoticed by the Indians. They did not consider that even the sun looked down into that chasm for but one short hour in the twenty-four, and then left it to the angry waters and blackening shadows; and that the faint moonlight reaching the bottom of the canyon would hardly serve to reveal the horror of their situation. Midnight came, as they thought, by the measurement of the dark, dreary hours; when seizing the poles, they untied the rope that held the raft, and, tossed about by the current, they rushed through the yawning canyon on

their adventurous voyage to an unknown landing. Through the long night they clung to the raft as it dashed against half concealed rocks, or whirled about like a plaything in some eddy, whose white foam was perceptible even in the blackness.

“They prayed for the daylight, which came at last, and with it a smoother current and less rugged banks, though the canyon walls appeared to have increased in height. Early in the morning (August 25th) they found a spot where they could make a landing, and went ashore. After eating a little of their water-soaked provisions, they returned and strengthened their raft by the addition of some light pieces of cedar, which had been lodged in clefts of the rocks by recent floods. White estimates the width of the river where they landed at 200 yards, and the current at three miles per hour. After a short stay at this place they again embarked, and during the rest of the day they had no difficulty in avoiding the rocks and whirlpools that met them at every bend of the river.

“In the afternoon, and after having floated over a distance estimated at thirty miles from the point of starting, they reached the mouth of Green river, or rather where the Green and the Grand unite to form the Colorado proper. Here the canyons of both streams form one of but little greater width, but far surpassing either in the height and grandeur of its walls. At the junction, the walls were estimated at 4,000 feet in height. Detached pinacles appeared to rise, one above the other, for

1,000 feet higher, from amidst huge masses of rock, confusedly piled, like grand monuments to commemorate this 'meeting of the waters.' The fugitives felt the sublimity of the scene, and in contemplating its stupendous and unearthly grandeur, they forgot for the time their own sorrows.

"The night of the day upon which they entered the Great Canyon, and indeed on nearly all the subsequent nights of the voyage, the raft was fastened to a loose rock, or hauled up on some strip of bottom land, where they rested till daylight next morning.

"As they floated down the canyon the grey sandstone walls increased in height; the lower portion was smooth from the action of floods, but the perpendicular wall rock above became more and more rugged, until the far off sky appeared to rest upon a fringe of pinnacles on either side. Here and there a stunted cedar clung to the cliff side 2,000 feet overhead, or a prickly cactus tried to suck sustenance from the bare rock. No living thing in sight beyond the raft, for even the wing of bird which could pass the chasms in the upper world never fanned the dark air in those subterranean depths. Naught to gaze upon but their own pale faces and the cold grey walls that hemmed them in, and mocked at their escape. Here and there the raft shot past side canyons, black and forbidding, like cells set in the walls of a mighty prison.

"Baker had informed his comrades as to the geography of the country, and while floating down they remembered that Callville was at the

mouth of the canyon, which could not be far off; 'such wonderful walls could not last.' Then hope came with the promise of escape. A few days would take them to Callville; their provisions could be made to last for five. So these two men, thus shut in from the world, buried, as it were, in the very bowels of the earth, in the midst of a great unknown desert, began to console themselves, and even to jest at their situation.

"Forty miles below their entrance into the canyon of the Colorado, they reached the mouth of the San Juan River. They attempted to enter it, but its swift current cast them back. The perpendicular walls, high as those of the Colorado, with the water flowing from bank to bank, forbade their abandoning their raft to attempt escape in that direction. So they floated away. At every bend of the river it seemed as if they were descending deeper into the earth, and that the walls were coming closer together above them, shutting out the narrow belt of sky, thickening the black shadows, and redoubling the echoes that went up from the foaming waters.

"Four days had elapsed since they embarked on the frail raft; it was now August 28th. So far they had been constantly wet, but the water was comparatively warm, and the current more regular than they could have expected. Strole had taken it upon himself to steer the raft, and, against the advice of White, he often set one end of the pole against the bank of some opposing rock, and then leaned with the other end against his shoulder, to push the raft away. As yet they had seen no natural bridge spanning

the chasm above them, nor had fall or cataract prevented their safe advance. About three o'clock on the afternoon of the 28th, they heard the deep roar as of a waterfall in front of them. They felt the raft agitated, then whirled along with frightful rapidity towards a wall that seemed to bar all farther progress. As they approached the cliff, the river made a sharp bend, around which the raft swept, disclosing to them, in a long vista, the water lashed into foam, as it poured through a narrow precipitous gorge, caused by huge masses of rock detached from the main wall. There was no time to think. The logs strained as if they would break their fastenings. The waves dashed around the men, and the raft was buried in the seething waters. White clung to the logs with the grip of death. His comrade stood up for an instant with the pole in his hands, as if to guide the raft from the rocks against which it was plunging; but he had scarcely straightened, before the raft seemed to leap down a chasm, and, amid the deafening roar of water, White heard a shriek that thrilled him to the heart, and looking around he saw, through the mist and spray, the form of his comrade tossed for an instant on the water, then sinking out of sight in the whirlpool.

“White still clung to the logs, and it was only when the raft seemed to be floating smoothly, and the sound of the rapids was left behind, that he dared to look up; then it was to find himself alone, the provisions lost, and the lengthening shadows warning him of the approaching night. A feeling of despair seized him, and

clasping his hands he prayed for the death he was fleeing from. He was made cognizant of more immediate danger by the shaking of his raft, the logs were separating; then he worked, and succeeded in effecting a landing near some flat rocks, where he made his raft fast for the night. After this he sat down, to spend the long gloomy hours in contemplating the horror of his situation, and the small chance for completing the adventurous voyage he had undertaken. He blamed himself for not having fought the Indians till he had fallen with Baker. He might have escaped through the San Juan valley and the mountains beyond to the settlements. Had he done so, he would have returned to his home, and rested satisfied with his experience as a prospector. And when he thought of 'home,' it called up the strongest inducements for life, and he resolved, to use his own words, 'to die hard, and like a man.'

"Gradually the dawn, long perceptible in the upper world, began to creep down the black canyon, and gave him light to strengthen his raft, and launch it again into the treacherous river. As he floated down he remembered the sad fate of Strole, and took the precaution to lash himself firmly to the raft so as to preclude the possibility of his being separated from it. This forethought subsequently saved his life. His course through the canyon was now over a succession of rapids, blocked up by masses of rock, over which his frail raft thumped and whirled, at times wholly submerged in the foaming water. At one of these rapids, in the distance of about a hundred yards, he thinks the

river must have fallen between thirty and forty feet. In going over this place the logs composing the raft became separated at the upper end, and, spreading out like a fan, White was thrown into the water. He struggled to the side by means of his rope, and with a desperate strength held the logs together till they floated into calmer water, when he succeeded in refastening them.

“White’s trials were not yet at an end, and in relating the following incident, he showed the only sign of emotion exhibited during his long series of answers.

“About four miles below where the raft separated he reached the mouth of a large stream which he afterwards learned was the Colorado Chiquito. The canyon through which it enters the main river is very much like that of the San Juan, and though it does not discharge so large a body of water, the current is much more rapid, and sweeps across the Great Colorado, causing, in a black chasm on the opposite bank, a large and dangerous whirlpool. White saw this and tried to avoid it, but he was too weak for the task. His raft, borne by the current of the Colorado proper, rushed down with such force, that aided by his paddle, he hoped to pass the waters that appeared to sweep at right angles across his course from the Chiquito. When he reached the mouth of the latter stream the raft suddenly stopped, and swinging round for an instant as if balanced on a point, it yielded to the current of the Chiquito and was swept into the whirlpool.

“White felt now that all further exertion was useless, and dropping his paddle, he clasped his hands and fell upon the raft. He heard the gurgling waters around him, and every moment he felt that he must be plunged into the boiling vortex. He waited with his eyes closed for some minutes, when, feeling a strange swinging sensation, he opened them and found that he was circling around the whirlpool, sometimes close to the vortex, and at others thrown back by some invisible cause to the outer edge only to whirl again towards the centre. Thus borne by the circling waters he looked up, up, up, through the mighty chasm that seemed bending over him as if about to fall and crush him. He saw in the blue belt of sky which hung above him like an ethereal river the red tinged clouds floating, and knew that the sun was setting in the upper world. Still around the whirlpool the raft swung, like a circular pendulum measuring the long moments before expected death. He felt a dizzy sensation, and thinks he must have fainted; he knows he was unconscious for a time, for when again he looked up between the walls, whose rugged summits towered 5,000 feet above him, the red clouds had changed to black, and the heavy shadows of night had crept into the canyon.

“Then, for the first time, he remembered that there was a strength greater than that of man, a power that holds the ocean in the hollow of His hand. ‘I fell on my knees,’ he said, ‘and as the raft swept round in the current, I asked God to aid me. I spoke as if from my very soul, and said, “Oh, God! if there is a way out of this fear-

ful place, show it to me; take me to it." Here White's voice became husky, and his somewhat heavy features quivered as he continued—"I was still looking up with my hands clasped when I felt a different movement in the raft, and turning to look at the whirlpool, it was some distance behind, and I was floating down the smoothest current I had yet seen in the canyon."

"This statement is the only information White volunteered; all the rest was obtained by close questioning. One of his friends who was present during the examination smiled when White repeated his prayer. He noticed it, and said with some feeling: 'It is true, Bob, and I'm sure God took me out.'

"Below the mouth of the Colorado Chiquito the current was very slow, and White felt what he subsequently found to be the case—viz., that the rapids were past, though he was not equally fortunate in guessing his proximity to Callville. The course of the river below this he describes as exceedingly 'crooked, with short, sharp turns,' the view on every side being shut in by flat precipitous walls of 'white sand rock.' These walls presented white perpendicular surfaces to the high water level, which had a distinct mark of about forty feet above the August stage. The highest part of the canyon, White thinks, is between the San Juan and the Colorado Chiquito, where the wall appeared to him more than one mile (5,280 feet) in perpendicular height, and at a few points even higher. Dr. Newberry states, from barometrical observations, that for a long distance the altitude is nearly 7,000 feet. But we must not begin to

draw conclusions too soon, much of interest remains to be told of this unparalleled adventure.

“The current bore White from the Colorado Chiquito slowly down the main river. His clothing was torn to shreds, and the few rags which clung to his frame were constantly saturated with water. Each noon the sun looked into the canyon only to pour his almost vertical rays on the famishing man, and to burn and blister those parts of his body that the scanty rags did not cover. One, two, three, four days dragged slowly past since he tasted food, and still the current bore him through the towering walls of the canyon. The hunger maddened him. He felt it burning into his vitals. His thoughts were of food! food! food! and his sleeping moments were filled with Tantalus-like dreams. Once he raised his arm to open some vein and draw nutriment from his own blood, but its shrivelled, blistered length frightened him. For hours as he floated down he would sit looking into the water, yet lacking courage to make the plunge that would rid him of all earthly pain. On the morning of the fifth day since he had tasted food, he saw a flat bank with some mezquite bushes upon it, and by using all his strength he succeeded in reaching it with his raft. He devoured the few green pods and the leaves of the bushes, but they only increased his desire for more. The journey was resumed, and he remembers that during the last two days of unbroken canyon wall, the rocks became very black, with shining surfaces—probably where igneous took the place of the cretaceous rocks.

“Six days without food, save the few green leaves, and eleven days since starting, and still the uneven current bore on the raft with its wretched occupant. He saw occasional breaks in the wall, with here and there a bush. Too weak to move his raft, he floated past and felt no pain, for the overwrought nerves refused to convey sensation.

“On the afternoon of this, the sixth day, he was roused by hearing the sound of human voices, and raising himself on one arm, he looked toward the shore, and saw men beckoning to him. A momentary strength came to his arms, and, grasping the paddle, he urged the raft to the bank. On reaching it he found himself surrounded by a band of Yampais Indians (Havasupais), who for many years have lived on a low strip of alluvial land along the bottom of the canyon, the trail to which, from the upper world, is only known to themselves. One of the Indians made fast the raft, while another seized White roughly and dragged him up the bank. He could not remonstrate; his tongue refused to give a sound, so he pointed to his mouth and made signs for food. The fiend that pulled him up the bank, tore from his blistered shoulder the shreds that had once been a shirt, and was proceeding to take off the torn trousers, when, to the credit of the savage be it said, one of the Indians interfered, and pushed back his companions. He gave White some meat, and roasted mezquite beans to eat, which the famished man devoured, and after a little rest he made signs that he wanted to go to the nearest dwellings of the white men. The Indians told

him he could reach them in 'two suns' by his raft, so he stayed with them all night, and with a revolver that remained fastened to the logs, he purchased some mezquite beans, and the half of a dog.

"Early the next morning he tottered to the bank, and again pushed into the current. The first day out he gave way to the yearnings for food, and, despite his resolution to the contrary, he ate up his entire stock of provisions, which did not, by any means, satisfy his craving. Three long days of hope and dread passed slowly by, and still no signs of friends. Reason tottered, and White stretched himself on the raft; all his energies exhausted, life and death were to him alike indifferent.

"Late in the evening of the third day after leaving the Indians, and fourteen days from the time of starting on this perilous voyage, White again heard voices, accompanied by the rapid dash of oars. He understood the words, but could make no reply. He felt a strong arm thrown around him, and he was lifted into a boat, to see manly bearded faces looking on him with pity. The great objective point, Callville, was reached at last; the battle for a life was won, but with the price of unparalleled suffering. The people of this Mormon settlement had warm, generous hearts, and, like good Samaritans, lavishly bestowed every care on the unfortunate man, so miraculously thrown into their midst from the bowels of the unknown canyon. His constitution, naturally strong, soon recovered its terrible shock, and he told his new found friends his wonderful story, the

first recital of which led them to doubt his sanity.

“Charles McAllister, at present an assistant in the store of Mr. Todd at Fort Mojave, was one of the three men who went in the boat to White’s assistance. He said that he never saw so wretched a looking man as White when he first met him; his feet, legs, and body were literally flayed, from exposure to drenching from water and the scorching rays of the sun. His reason was almost gone, his form stooped, and his eyes were so hollow and dreary, that he looked like an old and imbecile man. Mr. W. H. Hardy, of Hardyville, near Fort Mojave, brought White thither, that we might see and talk with him. Mr. Hardy corroborates the statements of McAllister, and from his knowledge of the country above Callville, says that it would be impossible for White to have come for any distance by the river, without travelling through the whole length of the Great Canyon of the Colorado. Mr. Ballard, a mail contractor, in whose employment White is now earning money to take him home, says he believes him to be a sober, truthful man; but, apart from White’s statement, Ballard is confident he must have traversed, and in the manner stated, that hitherto unexplored chasm which completes the missing link between the upper and lower course of the Great Colorado.

“Dr. Parry, our geologist, thinks that the subjoined conclusions may be summed up as some of the new additions to our previous geographical knowledge of the hydrography of the

Colorado of the West, derived from this remarkable voyage.

“1. The actual location of the mouth of the San Juan forty miles below the Green River junction, and its entrance by a canyon continuous with that of the Colorado, above and below the point of junction.

“2. From the mouth of the San Juan to the Colorado Chiquito, three days’ travel in the swiftest portion of the current allowing four miles per hour for fifteen hours or sixty miles per day, would give an estimated distance of 180 miles, including the most inaccessible portion of the canyon.

“3. From the Colorado Chiquito to Callville occupied ten days’ travel. As this part of the route was more open, and probably comprised long stretches of comparatively still water, it would not be safe to allow a distance of over thirty miles per day, or 300 miles for this interval. Thus the whole distance travelled would be 550 miles, or something over 500 miles from Green River Junction to the head of steamboat navigation at Callville.

“4. The absence of any distinct cataracts, or perpendicular falls, would seem to warrant the conclusion that in time of high water, by proper appliances, in the form of india rubber boats, and provisions secured in waterproof bags, with good resolute oarsmen, the same passage might be safely made, and the actual course of the river mapped out, and its peculiar geological features properly examined.

“5. The construction of bridges by a single span would be rendered difficult of execution.

on account of the usual flaring shape of the summits. Possibly, however, points might be found where the mesas approach sufficiently near each other for such purpose.

“6. The width of the river, at its narrowest point, was estimated at 100 feet, and the line of high-water mark at forty feet above the average stage in August.

“7. The long continued uniformity of the geological formation (termed ‘white sandstone,’ probably cretaceous) is remarkable; but under the term may have been comprised some of the later stratified formations. The contrast on reaching the dark igneous rock was so marked that it could not fail to be noticed.

“8. Any prospect for useful navigation up or down the canyon during the season of high water, or the transportation of lumber from the upper pine regions, could not be regarded as feasible, considering the long distance and the inaccessible character of the river banks.

“9. No other satisfactory method of exploration, except along the course of the river, could be adopted to determine its actual course and peculiar natural features; and James White, as the pioneer of this enterprise, will probably long retain the honour of being the only man who has traversed, through its whole course, the Great Canyon of the Colorado, and lived to recount his observations on so perilous a trip.”

CHAPTER VII.

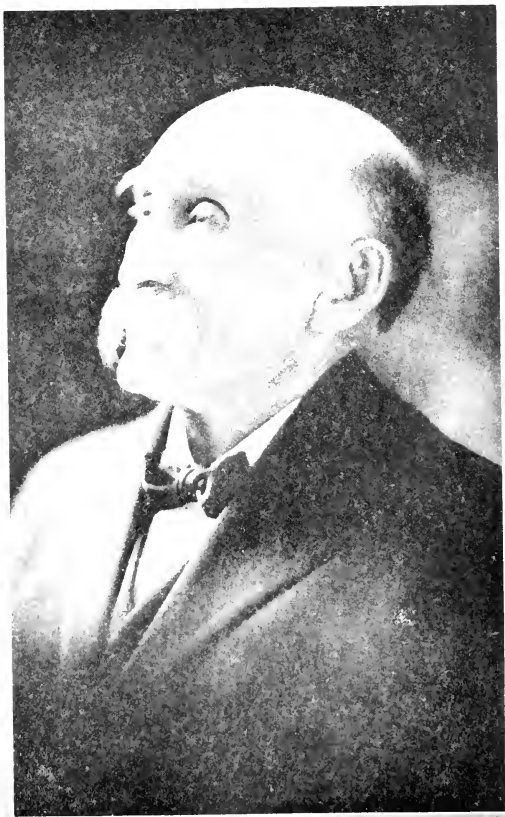
EXPLORATIONS AND SURVEYS (Continued).

STORY OF WHITE'S TRIP, MADE OFFICIAL U. S. SENATE DOCUMENT—ARTICLE BY THOMAS F. DAWSON—STATEMENT IN ROCKY MOUNTAIN HERALD—WHITE'S OWN STATEMENT—CORROBORATIVE EVIDENCE—WHITE'S AFTER LIFE.

Since the foregoing was written I have received through the kindness of the Hon. Henry F. Ashurst, a copy of Senate Document No. 42, of the 65th Congress, First Session, which is an article written by Thomas F. Dawson on the Grand Canyon, in which the story of White's adventure is dealt with fully. Here it is shown that Dr. Parry, who was connected with the railroad expedition at that time, wrote the account of White's trip from notes made by Major Calhoun, who says that he obtained the facts from White himself.

The story, as written by Major Calhoun, and printed soon after, is included in a small book entitled "Wonderful Adventures," published by W. B. Evans & Co., of Philadelphia, of which city Major Calhoun was a resident. It is the first of a series of adventures of which the work is composed, and bears the title, "Passage of the Grand Canyon of the Colorado," by A. R. Calhoun.

In this document the story as it deals with White's journey, and as written by Major Calhoun, is published in full, and differs in no



JAMES WHITE.
In his 80th year.

material point from that given in the foregoing pages, attributed to Dr. Parry. Here is also printed an account of White's voyage published in the Rocky Mountain Herald under date of January 8th, 1869, about five months before Major Powell began his exploration. It was sent from an obscure place in New Mexico and the writer appears to have been under the impression that Major Powell had already started on his work. The name of the author is not preserved, but the account differs in some respects from the others. Referring to the prospective expedition by Major Powell, the writer says:

"I trust Mr. Powell's expedition is progressing favorably and that he will be able to furnish a satisfactory report to an expectant public, for I can assure you that should he be entirely successful, he will accomplish a work the magnitude of which—leaving its danger entirely out of consideration—will far surpass that of any former exploration on the American continent."

The writer further said that the Canyon had never been traversed before, and in this connection added: "None of the Indian tribes on the river have either remembrance or tradition that the voyage had ever previously been made."

The writer further said that White and his companion, Strole, had little knowledge of the country, and that although they had heard of the Grand Canyon, they had no definite idea either of its locality or its extent. There was but little rough water at first, and for a time all

went well. They were able to land at night, but having no means of making a fire, went hungry to sleep. The second day the water was smooth until noon, when they encountered rapids, swift and rocky, in descending which they lost their carbines and their little store of flour—their only provisions—while their revolvers were left too wet for use. Below these rapids they found an island on which they spent their second night, eating screw beans to assuage their hunger. The article proceeds as follows:

“Having passed the night on the island, our voyagers set out in the morning with their raft in better condition than before, and with renewed hope of soon getting to the end of their journey, or at least of reaching a port. From the size and depth of the stream they argued that Callville must be near. After they had floated for a few hours, however, the sound of falling water was borne to their ears, becoming more and more distinct as they proceeded until they were satisfied that they were approaching a cataract. Meanwhile they had gradually and almost unconsciously drifted into a canyon with high precipitous walls which confined the river within a narrower channel than that in which it had coursed above. A hasty reconnaissance convinced them that they could not escape from the gorge by climbing the walls, while the current was now so swift that it was useless to think of turning back. White took the precaution to lash himself to the raft, but Strole refused to take this precaution.

“‘I am an old Mississippi boatman and can stick to the raft wherever she goes,’ Strole said.

‘It isn’t much of a fall, and there is no danger in running it. We had better tie our revolvers, however; they are a little wet now, and a little more won’t hurt them.’

“On swept the raft with rapidly increasing speed; the voyagers silent, with stern, compressed lips and tense nerves boldly facing the peril which they were now powerless to avoid. One moment they were balanced on the brink of the cataract, the next they were plunged sheer 12 feet into the seething waters beneath.

“Emerging at length, White found himself alone upon the raft, which an eddy had caught in the rim of its vortex and was whirling around. White had been seriously disturbed by the shock of the fall, but when he recovered his self-possession, he looked around for his companion and quickly descried him in mid-channel some 20 feet distant, buffeting the current with feeble and uncertain stroke. Shouting to him some words of encouragement and hastily freeing himself from his lashings, White prepared to make such efforts as he could to assist and save his comrade. But almost immediately, poor Strole, half strangled, doubtless, and bewildered by his frightful plunge over the cataract, without a cry or a groan, sank and rose no more.

“The fate of either of his comrades would have been a merciful one to White in comparison to what befell him. Poor fellow, his troubles had hardly begun, while theirs were ended, at least for this world. The death of Strole fell upon him with crushing weight. Sinking upon the raft, which floated slowly

around with the eddy until it stranded upon the head of a small island, he abandoned himself for a brief period to all the misery of despair. But his rugged and energetic nature would not long succumb to such a feeling. Recovering himself, he began to survey as best he might his situation.

“White no longer doubted that he was in the Grand Canyon. He could neither scale the walls nor return. There was nothing left but to proceed down the stream, and in that direction there seemed not the shadow of a chance that he might succeed and live. He only dared to hope that by carefully tying himself to the raft his body might float through with some portion of it and be identified by means of a pocket memorandum book which he endeavored to secure to his person, so that his fate might become known to his relatives and friends.

“Having considered these things with the desperate calmness of a man who regards himself as doomed to speedy and inevitable death, he nevertheless omitted nothing which might tend to the preservation of his life. First, he overhauled his raft and tightened its lashings. Next he stripped the mesquite bushes which grew on the bank of their scanty crop, with which he partially appeased his hunger. Then, with a fervent appeal to the great Father of all, he launched his raft and floated away to encounter unknown dangers and terrors.

“It is hardly necessary to say that White kept no ‘log’ of his voyage, and it would therefore be impossible to give from this point the details of his daily progress. Never before did

mortal man perform such a journey. For nearly 500 miles he floated over a succession of cascades and cataracts varying from 4 to 20 feet, with patches of smooth water between. Frequently on plunging over a fall the raft was overturned, and it was with much difficulty that he saved himself from drowning. Once he was so long under water that he became insensible; but on that occasion the raft providentially emerged right side up, and when he revived he found himself floating along as if nothing had happened.

“Below each fall there was an island formed by the land thrown up by the eddying waters, affording him an opportunity of hauling up his raft for repairs—a very necessary operation, as the ropes by which it was bound were frequently cut upon the edges of the rocks at the head of the falls—and as a place of rest during the nights. At first the mesquite growing upon the islands supplied him with a scanty allowance of food, but after the sixth day he found the islands barren. A rawhide knife scabbard then afforded him some slight sustenance and a good deal of chewing for a couple of days, after which he was without food until he passed the Rio Virgen. One day he saw some lizards, but was too feeble to catch them. To add to his misery, he was stripped by the rocks and water of his hat, pants, drawers, boots and socks; his head, feet, and legs became blistered and raw by the sun’s rays.

“Day by day and hour by hour he grew weaker by exposure to the heat and because of want of food. And all the time the dark walls

of the canyon towered above him, nowhere less than a thousand feet, and in some places a mile and a half in height, to the best of his judgment. Anxiously he watched for some avenue of escape, some crevice or fissure in the adamantine walls which confined him, but there was none. The consoling reflection remained that it was perhaps better to be dashed to pieces or perish of simple starvation in the canyon than to scramble out of it and add the torment of thirst to those which he already endured. So he voyaged on, now helplessly broiling in the merciless rays of the sun as he floated calmly and yet swiftly along the expanse of the comparatively smooth water, then tumbling over a cascade or rushing through a rapid at the imminent peril of shipwreck upon the rocks which bumped and thumped his frail craft until its light timbers rattled; and now shuddering and with bated breath plunging over a fall, for aught he knew, into eternity. Day by day, and hour by hour, he grew weaker for the want of food, while from sitting in a cramped position and from exposure to the sun, his legs were so stiff and sore as to be almost entirely disabled. Still, with dogged resolution he persevered, improving every moment of daylight, and making, as he believed, at a moderate estimate, 40 or 50 miles every day.

“At length, on the evening of September 6, the raft, with our bruised, battered, and starving voyager, more dead than alive, and yet retaining a great deal of the wonderful vitality which thus far had sustained him, still clinging to it, emerged from the canyon. Again the

broadening river flowed between low, green banks.

“White felt that the worst of the voyage was over. If he could but hold out for a day or two longer, he would be saved. But though his spirit was undaunted, his physical strength was nearly gone.

“Soon after passing the mouth of a considerable stream, the Rio Virgen, he heard voices shouting to him. He could hardly convince himself that the sounds were real, and he gazed in wondering surprise toward the bank. A number of Indians leaped into the water, swam out to him, and pushed the raft ashore. He was roughly treated by the Indians, who tore off his coat tails and seized one of his revolvers. One of the Indians who spoke English told him they were Pah-Utes. They seemed to comprehend the fearful trip White had made and to express some astonishment among themselves that he should have survived it, but his condition excited not the smallest spark of sympathy in their dusky bosoms.

“White asked for food, and the Indians agreed to give him a small dog for the remaining pistol. But on securing the weapon, they let the dog escape. He was finally compelled to give them his vest for catching and killing the animal, and even then the Indians appropriated the fore quarters. White ate a hind quarter of the dog raw and without salt for his supper, and then lay down and slept soundly. In the morning he ate the other hind quarter and resumed his voyage to Callville.

“It chanced that at this time the barge Colorado, of Fort Mojave, in charge of Capt. Wilburn, with a crew of four or five men, was at Callville, receiving a cargo of lime and salt. Standing on the bank, the captain saw the strange craft passing by on the other side and hailed it.

“‘My God! Is this Callville?’ responded White in feeble tones.

“‘Yes,’ replied Capt. Wilburn, ‘come ashore.’

“‘I’ll try to,’ replied the voyager, ‘but I don’t know whether I can or not.’

“Fastening his raft about 200 feet below, White, a strange looking object, made his appearance on the crest of a hill near the landing.

“‘My God! Capt. Wilburn, that man’s a hundred years old,’ exclaimed one of the crew.

“He looked older, for his long hair and flowing beard were white. His eyes were sunken, his cheeks thin and emaciated, his shrunken legs a mass of black and loathsome scabs from his loins to his toes. As he crawled slowly and painfully toward them, the men, with exclamations of astonishment and pity, went to meet and assist him. They brought him to their camp, gave him food, washed and anointed his sores, and clothed him. White became delirious, but toward evening his wandering senses returned, and he was able to give an account of himself.

“James Ferry, United States quartermaster at Callville, made the Pah-Utes return White’s possessions and took care of him until he recovered.

“When I last heard of White he was carrying the mail between Callville and Mojave. At the latter place Gen. W. J. Palmer saw and conversed with him, and from his statements was satisfied that the length of the Grand Canyon is not less than 500 miles, and that its thorough scientific exploration, while not absolutely impossible, will present difficulties which will not soon be surmounted.”

White is still living, a resident of Trinidad, Colorado, and has furnished a statement at first hand of his adventure, which is here reproduced. It seems that after remaining a few months on the lower Colorado, and after visiting his old home in Wisconsin, Mr. White returned to Colorado and ultimately located in Trinidad, where he has lived since 1878, and there, in 1916, he prepared this account of his voyage which, as far as known, is the only printed statement made and signed by him, with the exception of a brief account which appeared in a Wisconsin paper soon after the conclusion of his voyage. Mr. White writes:

“I was born in Rome, N. Y., November 19, 1837, but was reared in Kenosha, Wis. At the age of 23 I left for Denver, Colo., later drifting to California, and there enlisted in the Army at Camp Union, Sacramento, in Company H, California Infantry, Gen. Carleton (some doubt as to the correct spelling of his name) being general of the regiment, and the company being under Capt. Stratton. I served in the Army three and one-half years, being honorably discharged at Franklin, Tex., on May 31, 1865. From there I went to Santa Fe, N. Mex., and

then to Denver. In the fall of that year I went from Denver to Atchison, Kans., with Capt. Turnley (some doubt as to the correct spelling of his name) and his family, and from Atchison I went to Fort Dodge, Kansas, where I drove stage for Barlow & Sanderson, and there I got acquainted with Capt. Baker, also George Strole and Goodfellow. This was in the spring of 1867, and the circumstances under which I met them were as follows: Capt. Baker was a trapper at the time I met him there, and the Indians had stolen his horses, and he asked me to go with him to get his horses, and I went with him, George Strole, and Goodfellow. We could not get his horses, so we took 14 head of horses from the Indians. The Indians followed us all night and all day, and we crossed the river at a place called Cimarron, in Kansas, and we travelled across the prairies to Colorado City, Colo.

“Before going further with my story I would like to relate here what I know of Capt. Baker’s history. He had been in the San Juan country in 1860 and was driven out by the Indians. He showed me lumber that he had sawed by hand to make sluice boxes. I was only with him about three months, and he spoke very little of his personal affairs. When we were together in Colorado City he met several of his former friends that he had been prospecting with in the early sixties. I cannot remember their names. The only thing I know is that he mentioned coming from St. Louis, but never spoke of himself as being a soldier, and I thought ‘Captain’ was just a nickname for him. He was a man

that spoke little of his past or personal affairs, but I remember of his keeping a memorandum book of his travels from the time we left Colorado City.

“After reaching Colorado City, Colo., Baker proposed a prospecting trip to the San Juan. There we got our outfit, and that spring the four of us started on the trip and went over to the Rio Grande. At the Rio Grande Goodfellow was shot in the foot, and we left him at a farm house, and the three of us proceeded on our trip. From the Rio Grande we went over to the head of it, down on the Animas, up the Eureka Gulch. There we prospected one month. We dug a ditch 150 feet long and 15 feet deep. We did not find anything, so we went down the Animas 5 miles, crossed over into the Mancos. At the head of the Mancos we saw a large lookout house about 100 feet high, which was built out of cobblestones. Farther down the canyon we saw houses built of cobblestones, and also noticed small houses about 2 feet square that were built up about 50 feet on the side of the canyon and seemed to be houses of some kind of a bird that was worshipped. We followed the Mancos down until we struck the San Juan. Then we followed the San Juan down as far as we could and then swam our horses across and started over to the Grand River, but before we got to the Grand River we struck a canyon; so we went down that canyon and camped there three days. We could not get out of the canyon on the opposite side, so we had to go out of the canyon the same way we went down. There we were attacked

by Indians and Baker was killed. We did not know there were any Indians about until Baker was killed. Baker, falling to the ground, said, 'I am killed.' The Indians were hiding behind the rocks overlooking the canyon. Baker expired shortly after the fatal shot, and, much to our grief, we had to leave his remains, as the Indians were close upon us, and George Strole and I had to make our escape as soon as possible, going back down in the canyon. We left our horses in the brush, and we took our overcoats, lariats, guns, ammunition, and 1 quart of flour, and I also had a knife scabbard made out of rawhide, and I also had a knife, and we started afoot down the canyon.

"We travelled all day until about 5 o'clock, when we struck the head of the Grand Canyon of the Colorado River. There we picked up some logs and built us a raft. We had 200 feet of rope when we first built the raft, which was about 6 feet wide and 8 feet long, just big enough to hold us up. The logs were securely tied together with the ropes. We got on our raft at night, working it with a pole. We travelled all night, and the next day, at 10 o'clock, we passed the mouth of the San Juan river. We had smooth floating for three days. The third day, about 5 o'clock, we went over a rapid, and George was washed off, but I caught hold of him and got him on the raft again.

"From the time we started the walls of the Canyon were from two to three thousand feet high, as far as I could estimate at the time, and some days we could only see the sun for an hour, possibly two hours. Each day we would mix

a little of the flour in a cup and drink it. The third day the flour got wet, so we scraped it off the sack and ate it. That was the last of the flour and all we had to eat.

“On the fourth day we rebuilt our raft, finding cedar logs along the bank from 12 to 14 feet long and about 8 or 10 inches through. We made it larger than the first one. The second raft was about 8 feet wide and 12 feet long. We started down the river again, and about 8 o’clock in the morning (as to our time, we were going by the sun) we got into a whirlpool and George was washed off. I hollered to him to swim ashore, but he went down and I never saw him again.

“After George was drowned I removed my trousers, tying them to the raft, so I would be able to swim in case I was washed off. I then tied a long rope to my waist, which was fastened to the raft, and I kept the rope around my waist until the twelfth day.

“About noon I passed the mouth of the Little Colorado river, where the water came into the canyon as red as could be, and just below that I struck a large whirlpool and I was in the whirlpool about two hours or more before I got out.

“I floated on all that day, going over several rapids, and when night came I tied my raft to the rocks and climbed upon the rocks of the walls of the canyon to rest. I had nothing to eat on the fourth day.

“On the fifth day I started down the river again, going over four or five rapids, and when

night came I rested on the walls again, and still nothing to eat.

“On the sixth day I started down the river again, and I came to a little island in the middle of the river. There was a bush of mesquite beans on this island, and I got a handful of these beans and ate them. When night came I rested on the walls again.

“The seventh, eighth, ninth, and tenth days were uneventful, but still going continuously over rapids, and still nothing to eat. So I cut my knife scabbard into small pieces and swallowed them. During the entire trip I saw no fish or game of any kind.

“On the eleventh day I went over the big rapid. I saw it before I came to it, and laid down on my stomach and hung to the raft and let the raft go over the rapid, and after getting about 200 yards below the rapid I stopped and looked at a stream of water about as large as my body that was running through the solid rocks of the canyon about 75 feet above my head, and the clinging moss to the rocks made a beautiful sight. The beauty of it cannot be described.

“On the twelfth day my raft got on some rocks and I could not get it off; so I waded on to a small island in the middle of the river. On this island there was an immense tree that had been lodged there. The sun was so hot I could not work, so I dug the earth out from under the tree and laid under it until the sun disappeared behind the cliffs. This was about noon. After resting there I got up and found five sticks about as big as my leg and took them

down to the edge of the island below my raft. I then untied the rope from my raft and took the loose rope I had around my waist and tied these sticks together. I slept on this island all night.

“On the thirteenth day I started out again on my newly made raft (leaving the old raft on the rocks), thinking it was daylight; but it was moonlight, and I continued down the river until daylight. While floating in the moonlight I saw a pole sticking up between two large rocks, which I afterwards learned the Government had placed there some years before as the end of its journey.

“When daylight came I heard some one talking, and I hollered ‘hello,’ and they hollered ‘hello’ back. I discovered then that they were Indians. Some of them came out to the raft and pulled me ashore. There were a lot on the bank, and I asked them if they were friendly, and they said they were, and I then asked them to give me something to eat, when they gave me a piece of mesquite bread. While I was talking to some of the Indians, the others stole my half-ax and one of my revolvers, which were roped to the raft. They also tore my coat trying to take it from me.

“After eating the bread I got on my raft and floated until about 3 o’clock in the afternoon, when I came upon another band of Indians, and I went ashore and went into their camp. They did not have anything for me to eat, so I traded my other revolver and vest for a dog. They skinned the dog and gave me the two hind quarters and I ate one of them for supper, roasting

it on the coals. The Indians, being afraid of me, drove me out of their camp, and I rested on the bank of the river that night, and the next morning, the fourteenth day after I got on my raft, I started to eat the other quarter, but I dropped it in the water. I floated that day until 3 o'clock and landed at Callville, and a man came out and pulled me ashore.

"Jim Ferry or Perry (not sure as to the first letter of this name) was a mail agent at this place. He was also a correspondent for some newspaper in San Francisco. He took me in and fed me. When I landed all the clothing I had on my body was a coat and a shirt, and my flesh was all lacerated on my legs from my terrible experience and of getting on and off the raft and climbing on the rocks. My beard and hair were long and faded from the sun. I was so pale that even the Indians were afraid of me. I was nothing but skin and bones and so weak that I could hardly walk. Jim Ferry (or Perry) cared for me for three days, and the soldiers around there gave me clothing enough to cover my body.

"I was at Callville about four weeks, and a boat was there getting a load of salt, and I got on that boat and went to Fort Mojave. There I met Gen. Palmer and told him my story.

"From Fort Mojave I went to Callville again and there worked for Jim Ferry (or Perry), carrying the mail for three months between Callville and Fort Mojave. Then he sold out to Jim Hinton, and I carried mail for him for a month. He sold out, and we each bought a horse and pack animal and we started from Call-

ville, going to Salt Lake in the spring of 1868. From Salt Lake City we went to Bear River. There we took a contract of getting out ties. Then I hired out as wagon boss. Then I quit and run a saloon. I sold out and then went to Omaha, Nebr. From there I went to Chicago, and from there to Kenosha, Wis., to visit my old home. That was in 1869. From Kenosha I went to Chicago, and from there to Leavenworth, Kans., and later to Kansas City, Kans. From there I went to Junction City, Kans., and then to Goose Creek. I drove stage in and out of Goose Creek for Barlow & Sanderson, for whom I had worked in Fort Dodge. I was transferred from Goose Creek to Fort Lyon or Five Mile Point. From there I went to Bent Canyon, Colo., and minor places, later drifting to Trinidad, where I have lived since 1878.

“These are the plain facts. There are many minor points that could be mentioned, but did not think it necessary to mention here. I have never been through that country since my experience, but have had a great desire to go over the same country again, but have never been financially able to take the trip.

“(Signed) JAMES WHITE.”

Corroborative evidence of the statement of Mr. White, and other statements, concerning his trip, is also produced by the writer, from which the following is taken:

“Among those who took cognizance of it was Bancroft, the historian of the western coast, who includes the White story in his history of Arizona. Samuel Bowles, the famous editor of

the Springfield Republican, and Albert D. Richardson, both of them early and frequent visitors to the West, accept the record without question, and both make mention of White's adventure in books written by themselves. It would be worth while to quote from all these notable publicists, but an extract from Mr. Richardson must suffice as a sample of the thought and expression of all. He went to the extent of giving the full story of the Grand Canyon exploit in the 1869 edition of his great book, 'Beyond the Mississippi,' regarded everywhere in its day as the last word on all things western. The following excerpt affords a fair idea of his estimate of White's story:

“ ‘Indians and trappers have always believed that no man could tread the stupendous gorge, hundreds of miles long, with its unknown cataracts and its frowning rock walls a mile high, and come out alive. But one has done it and lives to tell the tale. * * * What a romance his adventures would make. Let Charles Reade or Victor Hugo take James White for a hero and give us a new novel to hold children from play and old men from the chimney corner.’ ”

“In another connection in the same article Mr. Richardson characterizes White's feat as ‘perhaps without parallel in authentic human history.’ ”

The writer continues:

“The fact having been established by so many witnesses that White actually made his appearance below the canyon, the case would be complete if it could be shown that he went into the canyon at its head; but obviously such proof is

impossible, as there were no white men's habitations within hundreds of miles on the day that White and Strole pulled out into the stream to escape the savages who had so unceremoniously deprived them of their leader.

"All that can be done to substantiate White's story regarding the entrance upon his perilous enterprise, is to adduce as much testimony as possible indicating the probability of truthfulness in that connection. Necessarily, in view of the lapse of time and the remoteness of the locality, such proof is scarce. Still it is not entirely lacking. We have at least three witnesses whose testimony shows that White and Baker, with others, were moving toward the head of the canyon in the spring of 1867, and fortunately one of these still lives. He is no other than Hon. T. J. Ehrhart, the present highly regarded chairman of the Colorado State Highway Commission. The other two are S. B. Kellogg and Mrs. Thomas Pollock, both formerly of Lake City, Colo., whom we find quoted in the Rocky Mountain News, of Denver, in its issue of November 14, 1877.

"The statement in the News was a contribution from a correspondent, and the reference to White was incidental to an effort to clear up the fate of Baker, who, as the leader of the first expedition into the San Juan region, was a historical character in Colorado. Kellogg had aided in fitting out the original Baker expedition when it left California Gulch in 1860, and had become a member of the Baker party while it was operating in San Juan during the fall of that year, while Mrs. Pollock had joined the

party as the wife of another of its members. When seen by the representative of the Denver paper, both resided in Lake City, and Kellogg held office as a justice of the peace.

“The News correspondent bases his whole article on information supplied by these two former associates of Baker and, after detailing the facts regarding the venture of 1860, says:

“ ‘In the summer of 1867 Charles Baker returned to Colorado and camped for a short time on Chalk Creek. With several other men he started south from there and wandered through the mountains prospecting. Their number dwindled down until only Baker, a man named White, and another, whose name is forgotten, remained together.’

“The particulars of the futile prospecting trip through the San Juan, the journey to the mouth of the Grand River, the murder of Baker, and White’s voyage down the river are then recounted, after which recital the News writer adds:

“ ‘In May last White was in Lake City, and it is believed that he is now in the southern part of the State. He is about 35 years of age, a plain, matter-of-fact, practical, adventurous man. There is not a shadow of doubt about his wonderful adventures and his marvellous escape through the Canyon of the Colorado.’

“The writer does not say in explicit words that Kellogg and Mrs. Pollock met Baker while engaged in his new prospecting enterprise, but he gives the impression that they were relating facts of which they were personally cognizant. As a matter of fact, however, Baker’s presence

in that region would have been the subject of common knowledge, as he was known as few other men there because of his identification with the history of the country; so that there can be no doubt that Mr. Kellogg and Mrs. Pollock knew just what they were talking about. Hence their testimony goes far toward corroborating White's story of the party's visit to the San Juan prior to the adventure on the Rio Colorado. Incidentally, it is worth while to point out that this publication was made eight years after Powell's voyage. More significant still is the fact that it appeared in the Rocky Mountain News, whose editor was a close personal friend of Maj. Powell's."

The testimony seems abundant that White did pass the winter in the San Juan country in a futile prospecting tour. Among those who vouch for the correctness of this story is T. J. Ehrhart, Commissioner of State Highways of Colorado, and among those who vouch for the character of Mr. White, who seems to have raised a family and to have always pursued a quiet life, not realizing at any time that he had done anything extraordinary in passing through the Grand Canyon, is Hon. D. L. Taylor, Mayor of the City of Trinidad, who has known White ever since he located in Trinidad; the Hon. S. W. De Busk, State Senator from the Trinidad District; the Hon. Julius Gunter, Governor of Colorado, and Eli Jeffryes, Cashier of the First National Bank of Trinidad, besides a number of others. Mr. Jeffryes said:

"I have known Mr. James White, of this city, for the past thirty-three years. In all that

time I have known him to be a man of first-class reputation. He is the father of a very splendid family of children, all of whom are a credit to the community. We consider him entirely honest, and he is of good credit locally."

George Wharton James in his work, "In and Around the Grand Canyon," says that White subsequently worked for Major Powell. White declares that at no time was he in the employ of the Major, nor did he know him, and that he had never seen the man. In a letter dated "Trinidad, Colo., April 20, 1917," to Mr. Dawson, Mr. White says:

"I have come into knowledge of the fact that a charge has been made that I did not reach the Colorado river above the San Juan, but below it. You will notice from the account that I sent you of my trip that when our party started on our prospecting trip we were headed for the Grand River, as Baker said there was gold in that part of the country; but Baker was killed before reaching the Grand River in a canyon between the San Juan and the Grand. I knew nothing of the country, but Baker did, and he kept a memorandum; but we did not think of it after the Indians attacked us, as we had to make our escape as quickly as possible. Mr. Baker also carried a compass and kept us informed as to the directions we were travelling, and he told us that we were going north to the Grand River; that the Grand River and the Green River formed the Colorado River.

"Baker was killed after we crossed the San Juan River in a canyon between the San Juan and the Grand, being *north* of the San Juan.

We camped in the canyon that night, and the next morning we had to go out the way we went in, and that is where the Indians attacked us and Baker was killed.

"George Strole and I went down the canyon, travelling all that day, reaching the Colorado River just below where the Grand River and the Green River meet, forming the Colorado River, and there we made our raft and began our descent down the Colorado.

"We did not travel down any small stream before reaching the Colorado River.

"Mr. Baker was a man who had prospected a good deal in the San Juan country, and surely he knew where he was going and in which direction he was going.

"I guess the story will be attacked when printed, but I am willing to talk to anyone and convince them that I entered the Colorado River *above* the San Juan and *not below* it.

"I do not like to bother you so much, but I thought it best to let you know of this charge and to try and explain fully to you why I know that we entered the Colorado *north* of the San Juan river.

"Thanking you for your kindness, and hoping that some day I will have the pleasure of meeting you, I am,

Very truly yours,

"JAMES WHITE."

In view of this later evidence, as printed in a Senate Document, there seems to be no room to doubt that White actually made the journey, and that he was the first man to traverse the Colorado. Dellenbaugh has contributed sev-

eral volumes, devoted to Major Powell's explorations of that gorge, which, of course, form a great addition to the history of the Grand Canyon of the Colorado, but it should be remembered that Dellenbaugh was a partial biographer, and his declaration that it would be impossible for any man to pass through the Colorado on a raft should be taken with many grains of allowance, because he was anxious, apparently, not only to give Major Powell due credit as being the first to explore the Grand Canyon, but also to rob White of the credit of being the first, by a force of circumstances, to pass through it, and it is not surprising that others have taken Dellenbaugh's statements that the entire story was a "base fabrication," and so proclaimed it to the world. The effects of such statements, once given currency, are hard to eliminate. It is like the story first printed by Bancroft that Jeff Davis introduced a bill into Congress to organize the Territory of Arizona, when, as a matter of fact, Jeff Davis never did anything of the kind, yet, to-day, it is circulated and believed by a great many of the people who have not the time and the patience to hunt up the record.



JOHN WESLEY POWELL.

Explorer of the Canyons of the Colorado, Founder, and, till his death, Director of the Bureau of American Ethnology, and long Director of the U. S. Geological Survey. As he looked during the decade following his two descents of the Colorado. Taken about 1876, in Washington. Major Powell died September 23d, 1902.

CHAPTER VIII.

EXPLORATIONS AND SURVEYS (Continued).

MAJOR POWELL'S FIRST EXPLORATION OF THE GRAND CANYON—CATARACT CANYON—DESCRIPTION OF WALLS OF CANYON—THREE OF PARTY LEAVE AND GO OVERLAND—END OF FIRST EXPLORATION—MORMONS—APPROXIMATE DISTANCE BY RIVER—MAJOR POWELL'S SECOND EXPLORATION OF THE GRAND CANYON—WHITE'S STORY BRANDED FABRICATION BY DELLENBAUGH.

Two years later, in 1869, Major Powell organized his first expedition for the exploration of the Canyon, a short sketch of which he gave to the press in 1869, as follows:

“For two or three years I have been engaged in making some geographical studies in the mountains to the east and north of the Colorado Basin, and while pursuing them the thought grew into my mind that the canyons of this region would be a book of revelations in the rock-leaved Bible of geology. The thought fructified, and I determined to read the book; so I sought for all the available information with regard to the canyon land. I talked with Indians and hunters; I went among the Mormons to learn what they knew of this country adjacent to the ‘Kingdom of God,’ the home of the ‘Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints’; I read the reports of the United States’ Surveys, and I explored canyons of the tributary streams that I thought would represent

somewhat the nature of the Grand Canyon, on account of similar geological and physical features. From the fabulous stories, the facts, and the reports, and from the knowledge of other canyons, I came to the belief that the 'Grand Canyon of the Colorado' could be explored by descending the river in small boats. I also arrived at the conclusion that what was known as the 'Grand Canyon' was in fact a series of canyons, forming the banks or walls of the Upper Colorado and the lower portions of the Green and Grand, that unite to form it. These two streams unite in canyons, and some persons held that the vaguely defined 'Grand Canyon' was continued up the Green, and others that it was continued up the Grand, while others still asserted that these streams united in a valley. One man assured me that he, with several others, had laid out a city at the junction, but was driven away by Indians.

"Having made up my mind to explore the gorge, I came from the mountains to Chicago last spring, to procure outfit and build boats. Four of these were made on a model devised for the purpose of navigating canyon streams; and taking them out to Green River Station, where the Union Pacific Railroad crosses the Green, I was ready to embark. There I had a party of nine men awaiting my arrival, and anxious to enter the 'Great Unknown' with me—men all experienced in the wild life of the country, and most of them in boating on dangerous streams.

"On the 24th of May we started. For a few days our way was through a river of low canyons and small green valleys, until we reached the

Uintah Mountains. Through this range the river has cut a winding channel, forming the Uintah system of canyons. Near the lower end of this series Yampa river enters the Green by a canyon. Further down, in a valley portion the Uintah and White rivers come in. About thirty miles below this point we enter another series of canyons. Low walls of grey, buff, and rust colored sandstone shut us in. These walls slowly increase in height as we advance; the grey rocks are lost; dark red sandstone appears; the walls are broken down by lateral canyons, increasing in number until we are in the heart of the Canyon of Desolation. Sometimes these lateral canyons are so crowded, that the rock between them stands as a narrow wall hundreds of feet high, the end being, of course, towards the main canyon.

“Some lateral canyons have their own lateral canyons, then a fourth series, cutting the wall into sections, whose towering summits, though large enough to support cathedrals, seem scarcely to furnish footing for man. Two thousand feet—three thousand feet overhead is the summit of the walls, while rocks and crags, and peaks rise higher, and still higher away back from the river, until they reach an altitude of nearly five thousand feet. These rusty, grey, and dark red sandstones have no beauty of colour. A few greenish brown cedars are seen, looking not like shoots of evergreen spray, but like clumps of knotty war clubs bedecked with spines. These, with a little sage, constitute all the verdure. We next ran through Coal Canyon, and passed the mouth of Little White

River; then came a valley region, where we passed the mouth of the San Rafael, and soon entered Stillwater Canyon. The river winds through this with a quiet current, as if in no haste to leave this beautiful canyon, carved out of orange sandstone. All along its walls domed alcoves and amphitheatres have been cut out of the solid rock; grottoes and caves abound, narrow lateral canyons, channels of rivulets, born of a shower, and born again of a shower, are cut as clefts in the rocks; and at every curve on the inner side is a spot of willow bordered meadow. Then the walls grow higher, the river swifter, and we glide down to the junction of the Green and Grand. Here the walls are nearly 1,300 feet high. But away back from the river are lateral canyons, and canyon valleys, the floors of which are at about the same altitude as the immediate walls of the main canyon, and the walls of this upper set are hundreds of feet higher, and still further back again the country is cut into a labyrinth of canyons. The main walls at the junction are not vertical, but have the slope of broken rocks tumbled down, while the lateral canyons have mostly vertical walls with a sloping talus at the base.

"We remained at the junction several days, and then rowed out into Cataract Canyon. Soon we heard the roar of waters, and came upon a succession of rocky rapids and cataracts. Over some of these we were compelled to make portage; usually only the cargoes were carried over the rocks and the boats were let down with lines; but now and then boats and all had to be carried. When these cataracts and rapids were

unobstructed by rocks, or where there was any passage, we were able to run them, never finding any fall greater than nineteen feet in this canyon. Sometimes the waves below would roll over a boat and fill the open part; but they could not sink it, as each was decked fore and aft, and so had a watertight compartment at either end. Now and then a boat would roll over; but, clinging to its sides until they could right it, the men would swim to shore, towing it with them. We found much difficulty in the whirlpools below; for at times it was almost impossible to get out of them. They would carry us back under the falls, they would dash us against the rocks, or they would send us whirling down the river. For twelve days we toiled through this canyon, stopping once to measure the altitude of its walls near its highest point, and finding it nearly 2,500 feet. This was at the axis of a vast fold in the strata, and from that point the upper rocks slowly came down with a gentle dip to the southwest until we reached the foot of the canyon, 45 miles from its head. A rocky valley canyon was found here on the left, and the river made a bend around a sharp point on the right, which point was set with ten thousand crags and rocks. We called it Mille-crag Bend, and sweeping around this in a rapid current, our boats shot into Narrow Canyon, down which we glided almost at railroad speed, the walls rising vertically from the water 1,300 feet at its head, and coming down to high-water mark at the foot, 7 miles below, where the Dirty Devil, a river of mud, enters from the right. Now we had come

again to the red and orange sandstone, and the walls were of beautiful bright rock, low at first, but as we cut down through the strata, rising higher and higher. Now and then, on this and that side, the rocks were vertical from the water's edge; but usually they were cut into mounds and cones and hills of solid sandstone, rising one above the other as they stretched back in a gentle slope for miles. These mounds have been cut out by the showers from the bright orange rock, and glitter in resplendent beauty under the midday sun. Hour after hour have we gazed entranced on them, as they faded in the perspective and retreated to the rear; for the river was gentle, though swift, and we had but to steer our boats, and on we went through this land of beauty and glory.

“On the 31st of July we reached the mouth of the San Juan, at the foot of Mound Canyon, and went into camp for a day or two's rest. Then we started again. We had now run once more into dark red and chocolate coloured sandstones, with slate coloured beds below; these usually formed vertical walls, occasionally terraced or broken down, and from the crest of these the orange mounds sloped back, bearing on the top of each mound some variegated monument, now vertical, now terraced, now carved by time into grotesque shapes, such as towers, pinnacles, etc. These monuments stood alone or in groups, and spread over the landscape as far as the eye could reach. The little valley of the Paria River terminates this canyon, making it about 100 miles long. We named it Monument Canyon.

“By this time the river had cut through the sandstones and reached the limestones below them at this point, and as we advanced the channel was cut into this new strata. We entered between walls, low but vertical, which gradually increased in altitude to the foot, where they were 2,900 feet high, terraced and broken down into crags above. Halfway down the canyon we found the lower strata appearing as marble; the marbles were white, grey, and slate coloured, then pink, purple and brown; other strata appeared which were variegated with these colours intermixed, until at last we had 400 feet of marble wall, mostly variegated, from the water's edge. They were fretted by the water, embossed with strange devices, and polished into beauty. Where there were patches of marble floor left bare, large shallow water basins appeared, hollowed out by the whirlpools of the flood season, and filled with clear, sparkling water—a beautiful contrast to the red muddy river. Springs gushed from these limestone strata, forming fountains which plunged into marble fonts, and formed a strange contrast, after every shower, to the cascades of red mud which poured over the walls from the red sandstone above, with a fall of hundreds of feet. We called this Marble Canyon; it terminated at the mouth of the Little Colorado (Colorado Chiquito), and was about 36 miles long.

“Here a short rest, and then we pulled out on the home stretch—not a very short one either—nearly 300 miles by river to the mouth of the Virgen. The lower members of this carboniferous formation are of dark rust coloured sand-

stones, sometimes almost black. We soon ran through these, and through silurian red sandstone, and about 15 miles below the mouth of the Little Colorado, struck the granite.

“From the mouth of that stream to the mouth of the Virgen, our objective point, the general course of the river is to the west; but it makes three great curves to the south and three corresponding curves to the north. At the extremity of the southern curves the walls are granite at the base, reaching to an altitude of 800 feet. This usually rises from the water in almost vertical cliffs, set above with ragged crags, then a sloping terrace 100 to 500 yards wide, then walls of sandstone and marble towering 200 or 300 feet towards the heavens. In the northern bends the marble comes down to the water's edge. In the southern bends the river runs raging through a narrow gorge filled with rapids and cataracts, often falling at a plunge from 5 to 20 feet—the greatest being 22 feet. Over these we usually had to run, as the granite walls rarely gave foothold, though some portages were made. The roar of a cataract could always be heard for half a mile or more, so that we never came upon them unapprised of danger.

“In the last great bend to the south we came upon a series of cataracts and rapids crowded together into a distance of three-fourths of a mile; a stream came down through a narrow canyon on either side, and above their mouths we found a foothold to land, so we stopped to examine. On the river there seemed to be great danger, and no portage could be had. We arrived in the morning, and the day was spent

in exploring and trying to decide some method of getting over the difficulty. I found that we could climb to the summit of the granite, 800 feet high, and passing along the terrace could descend to a point below; but it would require ten days to get our boats and cargoes over, and we had scant five days' rations. When I returned to camp at night I announced to the men that we must attempt to run it. After supper one of them came to me and asked if I was willing that he and two others should leave the river and walk out over the mountains; they thought that they could climb out of the canyon, up the channel of the right hand creek. Of course, I objected, but they were determined to go. An hour's talk failed to shake their resolutions; so I sat up all night, made observations for the latitude and longitude of that point, and then walked up and down a little sand beach until morning.

"On the morrow the men were still determined to go, and I hastily fitted out the little party with guns, ammunition, and a small store of rations. In the meantime those going down the river were ready to start. Not being able to man it, I tied up one of the boats and abandoned it. When all was ready we shook hands, and some tears were started, as each party thought the other going to destruction. 'Goodby,' and away went our boat over the first cataract, then amongst the rocks and over the second to the left of a huge rock and whirlpool, and then leaping a third, it shot into an eddy below.

“The boats were half filled with water, but that was of common occurrence; we really found it less dangerous than a hundred we had run above. The men that were left sat on the cliffs and watched us go safely over, so we went into camp and waited two hours, hoping that they would join us with the boat left tied to the rock above. But we never saw nor heard of them since.

“The same afternoon we passed one more dangerous rapid, and then had fair sailing to the end of the canyon, where the river debouches into Mormon Valley, so named by our party.

“This ended the exploration of the Grand Canyon of the Colorado—its head at the confluence of the Little Colorado, its foot at the entrance of Mormon Valley, its length 238 miles, its altitude from 2,500 to 4,000 feet. A number of clear streams flow into it from either side, the largest coming down from the Buckskin Mountains on the north, which we named Right Angle River.

“I have mentioned the terraces of the southern bends; these have been the sites of ancient Indian villages, inhabited by a race of diminutive people now almost extinct. Their little clusters of houses, found on the south side of the river, were 800 or 1,000 feet above the water. They were built of stone laid in mortar, and seem to have had reservoirs for water. Fragments of their pottery are found scattered about in great profusion, and deeply worn foot paths leading from village to village, or down to the river, or up to the summit plain, were frequently seen. On the northern bend their

dwellings were near the river. Some of the ruins seem to be centuries old, and others to have been inhabited by the present generation—the latter were found near the mouth of the Little Colorado. Other ruins and fragments of pottery were found in the canyons above, and away up in the valleys of the Uintah. Only a few villages of these interesting people now remain in the country to the southeast.

“Below the Grand Canyon the river and adjoining country had been explored by Mormon parties, and here ended the ‘Great Unknown,’ no longer thus to be designated. One party had crossed through Mormon Valley; another had brought a skiff down the Grand Wash just below it, and descended in it to the mouth of the Virgen—to Call’s Landing, and still other parties have passed through the country whose reports I find quite correct, except that they a little over estimated the distances. Alternating valleys and canyons were passed till we reached the mouth of the Virgen, where we came upon three white men dragging a seine. They proved to be Mormons, who had been sent on to prepare for a large settlement of people, which will be sent here by the Church, to build up another of those wonderful villages seen only in the ‘Kingdom.’

“The whole region was one of great scenic beauty and grandeur; the constant change in geological structure made a constant change of scenery. The high walls enclosing a tortuous river, shut off the view before, and as we advanced, it opened out, ever bringing into view some new combination of marvel or beauty.

The impression of this scenery was the more vivified by a little anxiety—the shadow of a pang of dread ever present to the mind.

“Of my party, I should like to say that some left me at the start, cutting the number down to ten, including myself. One left me at the mouth of the Uintah, three left me as mentioned before, and five went through. These were Captain W. H. Powell, John C. Sumner, George T. Bradley, W. Rhodes Hawkins, and Andrew Hall.”

I append a table of approximate distances, from source to mouth of the Rio Colorado, collected from the most authentic sources, 925 miles of which were traversed and measured by Major J. W. Powell:

APPROXIMATE DISTANCES BY RIVER. GREEN RIVER.

	Miles Intermediate.	Total in Miles.
From headwaters of Green River to Green River Crossing (on the U. P. R. R.) about.....	130	130
Through valley to mouth of Henry's Fork	60	190
Through Uintah series of Canyons	70	260
Through valley past mouths of Uintah and White rivers.....	50	310
Through Lower Green River sys- tem of canyons to junction of Green and Grand	190	500

RIO COLORADO.

	Miles Intermediate.	Total in Miles.
Through Cataract Canyon	45	545
Through Mound Canyon	7	552
Through Narrow Canyon to mouth of San Juan River	68	620
Through Monument Canyon to mouth of Paria River	100	720
Through Marble Canyon to mouth of Little Colorado	36	756
Through Grand Canyon	238	994
Through valley to mouth of Virgen	43	1,037
Through Callville	18	1,055
Fort Mojave	75	1,130
The Needles	25	1,155
Mouth of Bill Williams's Fork . . .	60	1,215
Fort Yuma	190	1,405
Head of the Gulf of California . . .	150	1,555

This was the first scientific investigation ever made of the Grand Canyon. Major Powell made a second expedition two years later, full accounts of which have been written by F. S. Dellenbaugh in two books entitled "The Romance of the Colorado River," and "A Canyon Voyage."

Dellenbaugh brands White's story as a fabrication, but the fact remains that White was taken up at Callville in an exhausted condition. Everyone who knew W. H. Hardy, who is quoted as one of the persons who interviewed White, knows that the old gentleman was the last man on earth to be imposed upon by any fictitious story. According to White's story, a few days

before arriving at Callville, he was drawn out of the water by a band of Indians. These Indians were, unquestionably the Havasupais, who had inhabited that portion of the Colorado Canyon for many years, how long, no one knows. Whipple, in his survey in 1854-55, speaks of them, and they are cultivating the same land to this day. White was by no means a boaster. He was a quiet, industrious, peaceable man, and after recovering his health, his only ambition was to return to his old home in Wisconsin. I would not detract from the laurels Major Powell has honestly earned. He was an indefatigable explorer and scientist, and as this history proceeds it will be shown that he did much for the conquest of the arid West.

CHAPTER IX.

THE MILITARY.

GENERAL MASON'S REPORT—DIFFERENT INDIAN TRIBES—FORTS IN ARIZONA—GENERAL MCDOWELL'S REPORT—PRAISE FOR ARIZONA VOLUNTEERS—EXPEDITIONS AGAINST INDIANS—CONDITIONS IN ARIZONA BY MAJOR GENERAL HALLECK.

General John S. Mason's report shows the condition of the Territory at the time he assumed command, and the necessity for vigorous operations on the part of the military. His recommendations were certainly wise so far as the employment of Arizona native troops for operation against the hostiles were concerned. All subsequent commanders for several years afterwards agreed with him that the native troops, Papagoes, Pimas, Mexicans, and also volunteers of our own race, were more effective in the Indian warfare than were two or three times the number of regular troops.

Tucson, at that time, according to General Mason's statement, was but little more than a village, and, while in the northern part of the Territory, and along the Colorado in the neighborhood of Yuma, there was quite a large population of whites and others, yet in all their enterprises they lacked the protection of the Government. General Mason was superseded before he had an opportunity to make effective the policy outlined by him in this report, which follows:

“HEADQUARTERS, DISTRICT OF ARIZONA.

“Camp on the Rio Gila, Sacaton, April 29, 1866.

“SIR: In compliance with your letter of the 30th ultimo, I have the honor to submit the following report of operations in this district since I assumed command of the same in May last.

“Before leaving San Francisco, neither the general commanding the department nor myself could learn anything definite as to the actual number of troops in the Territory, their status, nor the state of their supplies; but we were assured there were small garrisons at Fort Whipple near Prescott; Fort Goodwin on the Upper Gila; Fort Bowie at Apache Pass, and at Tubac.

“The seventh California infantry volunteers, four companies of native California cavalry volunteers, and one company of the first California cavalry volunteers, were assigned to duty in the district. They commenced leaving San Francisco in April, and the last arrived in September. Supplies for six months, for the troops destined for service south of the Gila and east of Tucson, were sent to Guaymas, to be hauled through Sonora to the depot to be established at Tubac. Three months' supplies for the post at Fort Yuma, and those north of the Gila, were sent direct to Fort Yuma by water. It was understood before I left San Francisco that the companies of the seventh infantry would be distributed as follows: one company at Fort Mojave, two at Fort Yuma, four at Calabasas, or at some point near the site of

old Fort Buchanan, and three at Fort McDowell, a post to be established north of the Gila, and near the country of the Tonto Apaches. The four companies of native cavalry were to be stationed at the post near Fort Buchanan, and the company of the First California cavalry at my headquarters, which we then supposed would be at Prescott. On my arrival at Drum barracks, learning that the garrison at Prescott was weak, I sent one of the companies intended for Fort Yuma to that point. On my arrival at Fort Yuma, on May —, a deputation of citizens of La Paz, a town on the Colorado river, about midway between Fort Yuma and Mohave, waited upon me with an urgent request for troops at that point, informing me that the mails, and, in fact, all intercourse with the interior was entirely cut off; that Prescott and Wickenburg were surrounded by bands of hostile Indians, out of supplies; that all the farmers had left their farms, and the whole road was deserted, and the garrison was too small to render any assistance. I ordered a company of infantry to proceed at once by steamer to La Paz, with orders to proceed to a point on Date creek, and establish a camp. I enclose a copy of instructions given to the officer in command, marked "A." The stores shipped via Guaymas were not permitted to land at that point. The vessel brought them to Fort Yuma, and we were compelled to haul them from there to their destination. Much difficulty and delay was experienced on account of the very limited amount of transportation in the Territory. My want of knowledge of the

nature and extent of the Territory, of the number of hostile Indians and their haunts, and the fact that I could find no person who knew much more on the subject than I did, determined me to visit as much of the district as I possibly could before either going to Prescott, the Capital, or establishing my headquarters at any point.

“Governor John Goodwin accompanied me on this tour. On our arrival at the Pima villages, he made arrangements to raise two companies of Pima and Maricopa Indians for the Arizona volunteers; also, for a company of Mexicans at Tucson, and one at Tubac for the same regiment. The result of observations on my tour led me to the following conclusions: That the country bordering on the Colorado river was inhabited by the Yuma, Chemehuevies, Mohave, and Pinto tribes or nations of Indians, at peace with the whites. Between these tribes and Prescott and Wickenburg were the Hualapais, on the north, and the Yavapais south; both wild Indians who had seen but little of the whites, and who would not hesitate to attack small parties, although overtures for peace had been made by them.

“The country east of Prescott, to the eastern line of the Territory, and north of the Gila, is inhabited by the Tonto, Pinal, Sierra Blanca, and Coyotero Apaches; in fact, most of the hostile Indians dwell north of the Gila river, or in the mountains contiguous to that stream, and east of the Rio Verde. One small but very hostile band, probably the very worst Indians on

the continent—Cochese's band—dwell in the Chiricahua and Huachuca ranges of mountains.

“At the time of my arrival in the district, I believe every ranch had been deserted south of the Gila. The town of Tubac was entirely deserted, and the town of Tucson had but about two hundred souls. North of the Gila, the roads were completely blockaded; the ranches, with but one or two exceptions, abandoned, and most of the settlements were threatened with either abandonment or annihilation. The mere establishments of posts in the vicinity of the settlements is of no practical importance. The Apaches, differing from almost all other Indians, in consequence of the difficulty of subsisting large parties, or of finding sufficient water, make their forages in small parties, joining forces at such points as they may have agreed on before hand, then separating again after an attack. The nature of the country is such that from the isolated mountains in the midst of extended plains they can watch the approach of any party, and as, from the great scarcity of water, they can always prepare an ambuscade, they seldom or never attack parties who are prepared or watchful, but depend entirely upon a surprise. If they fail in this they give up the fight. They are the most expert thieves in the world, having stolen from the people of Sonora for generations. They can come in small parties and steal stock almost in sight of the posts. To pursue them is useless. Soon they reach the rugged mountains, scatter into small parties, and can then defy either our infantry or cavalry; consequently I concluded

that the only true way to obtain a peace was to push into the country where they lived, where they had their wives and children, and their winter's supply of provisions and by destroying their rancherias and provisions in midwinter compel them to sue for peace. With this idea in view I issued a general order for a united and vigorous campaign.

“Colonel Wright, with eight small companies of his regiment arrived in October last. Colonel Wright with five companies, was sent to reoccupy old Fort Breckenridge now known as Fort Grant; and Colonel Pollock with the remaining companies, was sent to Fort Goodwin. Both posts have done a great deal for their sections of the Territory, being admirably located with reference to hostile Apaches. The post at Fort Grant will enable settlers to come in on the rich valley of the San Pedro. That at Fort Goodwin protects such Indians as may give themselves up and come to terms. The troops were at their stations, and the increase of expense to keep them on the move but trifling. Owing to several causes the results have not been as great as anticipated; the great trouble in bringing up supplies; the disinclination of some of the volunteer troops, who expected hourly to be ordered home, to take long scouts in midwinter; the extreme severity of the winter itself, the thermometer ranging as low as 14° below zero for days; the snow at a depth of twenty inches; and, finally, the withdrawal of volunteers and substitution of regulars at a time that broke into the campaign, when we expected the most success—using that time in

making the transfer instead of scouting—all have tended to prevent great results; yet something has been done. A few days ago I forwarded a synopsis of the scouts made, and a map of the country showing the stations of the troops.

“I am satisfied that the only true policy is that at present adopted. By pressing the Indians from all points, and giving them a reservation where they can be protected and fed, we will succeed in the end. Already we have near nine hundred Indians on the reservation at Fort Goodwin, and they are reported as coming in daily. The Yavapais during the year have been induced to abandon their country and come in with the Mohaves. The Hualapais are desirous of doing the same thing, unless the late report of their murder by whites be considered a cause for renewal of hostilities. Numbers of the Tonto Apaches are moving down into the junction of the Gila and Colorado with the Yuma. The different valleys have been reoccupied, many new settlements have been started, and the year promises much for the development of the Territory. The troops now here are inadequate for the service. The district is immensely large, the distance over which supplies have to be hauled very great, requiring strong escorts to guard the trains, and with the very small number of men in the different companies, and but one officer with each company, most of the posts, for the present, can do but little more than hold their posts and escort their supply trains.

“Efforts are being made to throw in a grass supply at once, which will enable us to dispense with many escorts. The different posts now occupied are mere cantonments, no money having been expended in their erection, so that should it be deemed advisable to abandon any of them and curtail operations in the district, there would be but very little actual loss to the government. I would recommend that authority be given to raise two or three companies of mounted scouts from the men who have been raised on the Sonora frontier, and have been fighting Apaches for years—men who are accustomed to travel for days with a little pinole and dried beef, and who can follow a trail with the certainty of an Indian. Such companies would, in my judgment, do more efficient service than thrice the number of regulars.

“Your obedient servant,

“JOHN S. MASON,

“Brig. Gen. Volunteers, Commanding District of Arizona.

“Brevet Brigadier General R. C. DRUM,

“A. A. G., Department of California, San Francisco.

“Official:

“JOHN P. SHERBURNE, A. A. G.

“Official:

“JAMES B. FRY, A. A. G.”

As we have seen, a strong effort was made by the people of Arizona to continue in the service the Arizona volunteers, who had proved the most valuable aid to the military in subduing the hostile Indians. General McDowell, in his

annual report to the Secretary of War for the year 1866, speaks in high commendation of the Arizona volunteers.

This report on conditions in Arizona was: "The regular troops in this district consist of the first and third battalions of the fourteenth infantry, four companies of the first United States cavalry, and one company of the second United States artillery. Until very recently there were also several companies and fragments of companies of Arizona volunteers. The latter have been ordered to be mustered out on the expiration of their year's term of service, and most, if not all, have by this time been discharged. They were the most effective troops for the service in that country that we have had, and have done more than all the others together. In fact, it is not too much to say that they only within the last year have inflicted any considerable injury on the hostile Apaches. The regular troops, used to a different kind of warfare, unused to the kind of life necessary to obtain any results against the Indians in Arizona, seem to acquire very slowly the experience necessary to enable them to be effective for offensive operations.

"There has been a good deal of uneasiness within the year at several points along the river, particularly at La Paz, the mouth of Bill Williams's fork, Hardyville, and El Dorado Canyon, and it has been impossible to furnish the protection asked for, except to a limited extent. The hostility existing between the River Indians and certain bands of the Pi-Utes and Chemehuevis has caused alarm to the white in-

habitants who have been and are, friendly to the Mohaves. The killing of the head chief, Waba Yuma, of the Hualapais, by some whites on the road from Hardyville to Prescott, has also unsettled the good relations heretofore existing with those Indians.

“The hostilities on the road from Camp Cady to Fort Mojave with the Pi-Utes seem to have extended their effects to the Indians of that or kindred tribes further to the north and there have been offensive movements against the important mining settlements at El Dorado canyon. This has given alarm to those engaged in the enterprise of opening a line of trade by way of the Colorado river to Utah, and they fear their boat with its supplies may be in danger. At their repeated and earnest request I have ordered a guard of ten men to be detached from Fort Mojave to be stationed for sixty days in El Dorado canyon. This, I since learn, will take every man, not on special duty, away from the post, the others being absent escorting cattle to Fort Whipple.

“The Indians, who have heretofore been quiet on the road from La Paz to Prescott, and have confined themselves to limits prescribed by the military commander and Indian Superintendent, were found in large numbers beyond their limits in Skull valley. It is claimed they were there with hostile intent, and that they attacked a private train under escort of some Arizona volunteers. The result was an engagement, in which a large number of Indians were killed and wounded; it remains to be seen whether enough to subdue the tribe, or only to reflare it.

“The Arizona volunteers, heretofore stationed in Skull valley, having been mustered out of service, their place has been supplied by the company of the fourteenth infantry, from Date Creek, and the stations at the latter place and at Wickenburg have been abandoned.

“The post of Camp Lincoln, on the Upper Verde, has proved so favorable for operations against the Apaches that it will be maintained by a company of the fourteenth infantry, though the force, both in quality for this kind of service, and quantity, will not replace the volunteers whose places they take.

“The post at Fort Whipple, near Prescott, will be kept up for the present.

“The post at Fort McDowell, on the Lower Verde, now occupied by three companies of the fourteenth infantry and one company of the first cavalry, has, together with the post of Camp Lincoln, inflicted so severe a chastisement in repeated combats with the Apaches, that they have compelled them to beg for peace. This, heretofore, has been offered them on condition they would go to the place reserved for Indian prisoners at Fort Goodwin. But they represent that they are at enmity with the Fort Goodwin bands, and cannot live with them.

“I am not sure they are sincere in their desire for peace; but as they may be, and as I have now lost the force most competent to further chastise them, I have given instructions to grant them peace on the terms proposed to them by the late excellent commander of Fort McDowell, which will provide for their coming in as pris-

oners, in the vicinity of that station, and there plant and keep the peace with the whites and their allies, the Gila Indians, the Pimas and Maricopas.

“The post of Fort Grant, (two companies of the fourteenth infantry) at the mouth of the San Pedro, has been recently destroyed by the floods of the river, and the station has been removed to the site of old Fort Breckenridge. I hope soon to change it to the heart of the Apache country, where the climate may prove healthy, and there is an abundance of wood and grass, as well as pure mountain water.

“The post of Fort Goodwin, occupied by three companies of the fourteenth infantry, is the place I have assigned for such of the Apaches as have surrendered themselves, and claim to wish to live in peace with the whites. At times several hundred have been on the reservation, but the difficulty of at all times having supplies for them has made it necessary to relax the rule for their constant presence, that they might lay in a store of mescal, etc., for food. This may have been taken advantage of in some instances to escape and commit depredations on the settlements. I do not expect in one season to reform a people whose whole life has been one of plunder, but I have no doubt that a combined system of kindness, when they do well, and chastisement when they do ill, will have the same effect on Apaches as it has on other men, as well as animals.

“Owing to sickness in the valley, the small post on the San Pedro, above Fort Grant, has been abandoned.

“The camp on the upper San Pedro, near Barbecoma, is still maintained as a protection for the settlements, as are also the stations at Fort Bowie and Tucson. The companies stationed at Fort Mason, (so called) on the upper Santa Cruz near Calabasas, have been temporarily removed (by the district commander, on account of sickness) to the vicinity of old Fort Buchanan, whether to any good purpose remains to be seen.

“The cost of transportation is so great into Arizona that I have felt it good economy to do everything possible to raise, and stimulate others to raise, supplies in the country.

“I am glad to say that the experiment of a government farm on a large scale in the valley of the Verde, at Fort McDowell, has proved a success, and an abundant crop of corn and sorghum is about to be harvested, to be followed by a second crop of small grain.

“Like results are expected from the farm ordered to be opened at Fort Goodwin, so I hope that next year will show a reduction in the cost of maintaining the troops, to be followed by reductions in every succeeding year, for there is an abundance of good arable land in the country to support a large population.

“A great drawback to the service in the department is the lack of officers, both staff and regimental.

“There should be at least four officers of the quartermaster’s department in Arizona alone. There are but two there now, and they belong to the volunteer service and will undoubtedly soon be mustered out.

“The lack of company officers is such that at times companies are without a commissioned officer. At one time a post of two companies in Arizona had only one officer, a subaltern, to command the post, the two companies, and do the duty of quartermaster and commissary.

“Under authority given me from division headquarters to raise a hundred Indian scouts, I have directed the district commander in Arizona to enlist seventy Pimas and Maricopas and twenty tame Apaches.”

The most important military expedition against the Apaches during the year 1866 was commanded by George B. Sanford, Captain 1st U. S. Cavalry, the official report of which follows:

“HEADQUARTERS FORT McDOWELL,

“Arizona Territory, November 20, 1866.

“I have the honor to submit the following report of the expedition against the hostile Apaches, made in compliance with Special Orders No. 119, dated Headquarters, Fort McDowell, Arizona Territory, November 10, 1866.

“The expedition was composed as follows:

“Captain George B. Sanford, company E, first United States cavalry, commanding.

“First Lieutenant Camillio C. C. Carr, Company E, first United States cavalry.

“Company E, first United States cavalry, (47 enlisted men).

“One enlisted man of company B, fourteenth United States infantry accompanied the command, as acting hospital steward.

“Mr. Max Strobel, accompanied the expedition as a volunteer.

“Eight (8) Maricopa and five (5) Pima Indians also volunteered for the expedition.

“Mr. Thomas Ewing acted as guide. Total sixty-five (65).

“The rations consisted of pinole, jerked beef and coffee, which were carried by the men on their saddles. Four pack-mules were taken, but they were so lightly loaded that they were able to keep up with the command at a gallop. None of them carried one hundred pounds, and they might have been dispensed with entirely, but I wished to have some extra animals along in case any of the soldiers' horses should break down or be wounded.

“WEDNESDAY, NOVEMBER 14.—The expedition left Fort McDowell just as the sun was setting. Crossed the Rio Verde, and marched on the Pima trail to a small valley on Sycamore (or, it is sometimes called, Cañon) creek, where we camped. The camp was reached at 10 p. m. Distance from the fort, twenty-five (25) miles; direction, northeast. Wood, water and grass in abundance. The valley was so situated that it was almost impossible for the Apaches to discover us, without coming right into the camp.

“NOVEMBER 15.—Remained in camp all day, grazing the animals. At sunset saddled up and marched through Sunflower valley, and over the Mazatzal mountains, crossing the ridge by the pass at the North Mazatzal. Camped at 11:15 p. m. in a cañon about two (2) miles from Tonto creek. Distance from last camp, twenty-one (21) miles. Water and grass good.

“NOVEMBER 16.—At daylight two of the Indians were sent down to the creek to look for Apache signs. They returned in a few hours with information that, on the day before, two horses and one Indian had crossed the creek and gone in the direction of the Sierra Ancha mountains. At 1 p. m. saddled up and started on the track of these two horses.

“The Apache had followed no trail, but kept as much as possible in the bushes, evidently hoping to conceal his track. About six (6) p. m. we followed the track on to an old Apache trail, and shortly after came upon the sign of a mule and a burro. About seven (7) p. m. we commenced to cross the Sierra Ancha range, and at ten (10) p. m. had reached the summit. The moon was obscured by clouds a good deal of the night, which rendered tracking a very difficult operation; but the Indians stuck to it with the tenacity of bloodhounds, and about midnight they reported that they were pretty certain we were near a rancheria. After some attempts to get into the cañon, we were obliged to give up all thoughts of getting on to it that night. The rocks were so steep that a man could not walk at the mouth of the cañon on foot. At one (1) p. m. we lay down by the horses and waited for daylight. Distance, about thirty (30) miles. This march was a very hard one, as we were continually winding round the mountains, and over them, down into deep cañons, and through rocks and boulders. Although the night was very cold, we built no fires, for fear of alarming the Apaches.

“NOVEMBER 17.—At daylight we started right over the mountain, and after traveling up it for about half an hour, we discovered the rancheria at the head of the cañon. The men and Indians charged immediately down the rocks and into the rancheria, and, leaping from their horses, pursued the flying Apaches over the hills and across the cañons in the most gallant manner. Many of the men got bad falls among the rocks and precipices, but they kept on without any regard for anything but the Apaches. Six (6) were killed, five (5) were taken prisoners, and two (2) horses captured. The mule and burro had been killed, and were being roasted on the fire.

“There was a very large amount of winter stores in this rancheria, which were all destroyed and the rancheria burned. Among the articles found were two tin canteens, such as are issued by government, a portion of an English copy of the New Testament, some mail straps and pieces of a saddle, a gun lock and brass plates belonging to a gun, and baskets such as are used for carrying grain, etc., in great numbers. They had a great abundance of seeds, nuts, acorns, buckskins, serapes, and other articles used by the Indians, and the destruction of these just as winter is setting in will be a great blow to them.

“This was evidently an old established rancheria, and one which they considered very safe. Words cannot do justice to the place. It was as nearly inaccessible as possible. The huts were situated just at the head of the cañon, and back of them the rocks rose almost perpendicu-

larly for several hundred feet. On each side the slope was more gradual, but still it was terrific. A little stream issued from the rocks, and flowed through the cañon, and some fine oak trees grew along the banks. From this circumstance I called the place Oak Cañon.

“Mr. Thomas Ewing, (the guide) who has had much experience in Indian fighting, informs me that it was the worst place to get into that he ever saw.

“As soon as the fight was over, and the rancharia destroyed, we started after some cattle which one of the prisoners (an Apache squaw) informed us were in Greenback valley. Coming upon some fresh signs of Indians, we took the gallop again, and charged across Greenback valley, which was about five miles distant. Much to our regret, we found nothing of them. We crossed another range of mountains, and got to within a short distance and in sight of Salt river. Here we struck more fresh tracks, and made another charge, getting very close on to some Indians, who were gathering seeds. They managed to escape us, however, by concealing themselves in the rocks, and our horses were now so badly used up that we could not overtake them. On the last charge we were brought to a stand-still in another cañon, out of which there appeared to be no means of exit whatever for any animal without wings. The Maricopas and Pimas had never seen the place before, and could give no information about it. We accordingly turned round and came slowly back to Greenback valley, where we camped about two (2) p. m.

“The Apaches in the meantime had put up signal smokes, and alarmed the country.

“We grazed the animals all the rest of the day and during the night. Distance travelled this day, I should think, was about twenty-five (25) miles. As most of the time we were on the run, and travelling backwards and forwards among the rocks, it is rather difficult to estimate it.

“NOVEMBER 18.—Saddled up at daylight, and marched to Tonto creek, where we grazed the animals two (2) hours, and then crossed the North Mazatzal on the old trail, and camped in Sunflower valley. Distance thirty-two (32) miles.

“NOVEMBER 19.—Saddled up at daylight, and marched to a grazing place on Sycamore creek, where we remained two (2) hours, and then moved on, reaching Fort McDowell about five (5) p. m.

“No man or animal was lost in this expedition. The weather was quite cold at night, but pleasant during the day, and we had no rain.

“I expected when I started that this expedition would be a very hard one, and my expectations were fully realized; but success has amply repaid us.

“To Lieutenant Carr and the enlisted men concerned in this campaign I am exceedingly indebted for the activity and energy they displayed. The conduct of one and all was gallant in the extreme. Their success in the previous expedition had given them confidence in themselves, and every man exerted himself to the utmost to make the campaign a success. The

long preserved reputation of the first cavalry will never suffer in the hands of these men.

"I am also very much indebted to Mr. Thomas Ewing and Mr. Strobel. Mr. Ewing displayed his usual gallantry and energy. His knowledge of the country and of the habits of the Apaches is very extensive, and his services are exceedingly valuable.

"Mr. Max Strobel, who is a topographical engineer by profession, kindly undertook to make a map of this country, and to him I am indebted for the map which accompanies this report. He exercised the greatest care in taking the distance, directions, etc., and I think he has succeeded in making the most correct map I have seen of that section of the country.

"I cannot close without acknowledging my thanks to the Pimas and Maricopas who accompanied me. These splendid Indians performed their part in the most admirable manner and were of the greatest service during the whole trip.

"I am sir, very respectfully,

"Your obedient servant,

"GEORGE B. SANFORD,

"Captain 1st. U. S. Cavalry Commanding.

"By command of Brevet General McDOWELL:

"JOHN P. SHERBURNE,

"Assistant Adjutant General.

"Official: "JOHN H. COSTER, A. D. C."

Major-General Halleck, Commanding the Division of the Pacific, in his report, dated September 18th, 1867, has the following to say concerning Arizona:

“As stated in my last annual report, the Apaches and cognate tribes in Arizona and northern Sonora are the natural and hereditary enemies of the whites, of whatsoever nation or character. They have successfully expelled from that territory the Aztecs, the Spaniards, and the Mexicans, and they will yield to our people only when compelled to do so by the rifle and revolver. They probably resemble the African Bedouins more than any other people, and murder and robbery constitute almost the sole occupation of the Apache. These Indians do not fight in masses, like most of the tribes east of the Rocky mountains, but move stealthily in small bands over the greater portion of Arizona and the northern parts of Sonora and Chihuahua, waylaying and murdering travellers on the roads, and plundering and destroying unprotected agricultural and mining settlements.

“This mode of warfare, combined with the rough and desert character of the country, and the want of practical roads, renders it very difficult to operate successfully against them, or to give adequate protection to the small and scattered settlements in that extensive but sparsely populated Territory. Military operations would probably be more effective in reducing these hostile Indians if the troops could be concentrated in larger posts, so as to have available a greater number for active cam-

paiguing in the country where they leave their families and obtain most of their supplies; but for this to be done with the forces at our command, it would be necessary to withdraw all protection to many small settlements which have heretofore been often broken up, but are now in a more flourishing condition. It has, undoubtedly, been an increased expense to the Government, supporting and supplying so many separate and distinct military posts; but this expense has been more than compensated for in the reduced cost of transportation and supplies caused by the increased local agricultural products. Thus most of the military supplies last year were transported from San Francisco to Fort Yuma, and thence to the several posts at from 14 to 21 cents per pound—these high prices of transportation resulting from the cost of forage for teams on the road. This year, forage and commissary stores have been contracted for at the several posts and on the roads at greatly reduced rates, and transportation, in many instances, has been obtained at less than one-third of former charges. And the same or a greater reduction in the prices of supplies and transportation has been obtained by private individuals, who have heretofore drawn most of their provisions and other necessities from the Pacific Coast. It has, therefore, been found that local military protection to the small agricultural districts in Arizona has not only reduced the Government expenses in such districts, but has had a most beneficial effect upon the Territory generally.

“Under these circumstances, I have not felt myself justified in interfering with General McDowell’s protective dispositions by ordering a greater concentration of troops. With an additional force of, say, one regiment of cavalry and one or two regiments of infantry in that country, which are really required there, we would be able to accomplish the double object of affording local protection, and, at the same time, of penetrating into the mountain homes of these savages. In giving local protection to settlements, it has not been proposed to guard particular ranches, mines, or mills from Indian depredations. To attempt this would absorb and paralyze our whole force without accomplishing any result, for it is well known that these Indians will steal stock, even before the eyes of the sentinels who guard it, and pursuit in such cases is seldom successful. The only plan which has given any valuable results, is that of establishing posts in the vicinity of settlements, and from these posts sending secret expeditions of small parties into known Indian haunts. Large parties are not required, and are never successful, for the Indians discover their approach and hide themselves in the mountains. They can be reached only by the utmost secrecy and rapidity of movement.

“On the question of concentrating the troops in that country in a few posts only, I respectfully refer to the report of Lieutenant Colonel Roger Jones, and the accompanying remarks of Brevet Major General McDowell, transmitted herewith and marked ‘B.’ ”

CHAPTER X.

THE MILITARY (Continued).

REPORT OF COLONEL JONES, INSPECTOR—REMOTE-
NESS OF ARIZONA BAR TO FREQUENT INSPEC-
TIONS — RECOMMENDS SEPARATE MILITARY
DISTRICT FOR ARIZONA, AND CONCENTRATION
OF TROOPS—ALSO RECOMMENDS MORE AND
BETTER BUILDINGS—GENERAL McDOWELL'S
REMARKS ON COLONEL JONES' REPORT —
STATEMENT OF CONDITIONS.

The report of Colonel Jones, in which he criticised the military operations in Arizona, and made certain recommendations thereto, follows:

“(Confidential.)

“WILMINGTON, CAL., July 15, 1867.

“GENERAL: In reporting that I have completed the duty of inspecting the posts in Arizona and Southern California, I respectfully submit for consideration some general remarks and recommendations which I consider should constitute a separate and distinct report.

“In compliance with the order directing me to make this tour, I have from time to time, as occasion offered, forwarded reports of each post visited, and in them have set forth the state of affairs as revealed by my inspections.

“These reports exhibiting an unsatisfactory condition of affairs throughout a considerable portion of Arizona, my duty would be but partially discharged if I failed or omitted to show

how or in what manner matters may in my judgment be improved, which is my sole object in addressing you this communication.

“Leaving here on the 20th of April, the journey has occupied me eighty-four (84) days from this point, during which time I visited every post within the country designated, and travelled with government transportation over twenty-one hundred (2,100) miles.

“The first and most important change which is deemed absolutely essential to any lasting improvement in the general condition of affairs in Arizona, is the organization of the Territory into a separate military department with a commander residing at some central point.

“The distance travelled, and the length of time it has taken me to make this tour, show very clearly that it is not in the power of a commander residing in San Francisco to make frequent or even annual visits to Arizona. As further evidence on this point, reference is made to the fact that General McDowell has been able to make but one tour through the country in the three years it has been under his command.

“This remoteness of the department commander affects everything wherein his action is necessary, and during the past winter, at some of the remote posts, it required three months and upwards to communicate with, and receive answers from, department headquarters. In fact, in point of time, St. Louis is quite as near as San Francisco to Prescott and Tucson, if not nearer; papers and letters from St. Louis reaching those points as a rule in from eighteen to

twenty-one days. The rains of next winter may produce the like interruptions to the mails as was experienced last winter.

“The following is a case in point illustrating the inconvenience and detriment to the service arising from the department commander being stationed in San Francisco.

“On the 16th of April he ordered two companies from camp McDowell to camp Grant, and two from the latter camp to the former. On receiving the order Colonel Ilges applied to his quartermaster for transportation; the latter replying that he had none available. Colonel Ilges forwarded his application to the commanding officer at Fort Yuma, who sent it to Colonel Crittenden at Tucson, nearly three hundred miles distant.

“Not having any wagons at hand, and Colonel Ilges not being at that time under his command, Colonel Crittenden submitted the matter to me; and thus, but for my presence and the authority vested in me by General Halleck, this move would probably not have been made without referring the matter to department headquarters.

“It is immaterial whether these movements required promptness or not; the delay in making them fairly illustrates the inconvenience and injury the service in Arizona unavoidably sustains in consequence of it not being a military department per se.

“Another serious injury resulting from this remoteness of the department commander is the length of time soldiers have been kept in the guard house awaiting trial. To remedy this

General McDowell has ordered the release of prisoners who had been confined several months.

“In San Francisco, without telegraphic communication, and with unreliable weekly or semi-weekly mails, it is impossible for the department commander to know of any particular transaction in Arizona until long after it has transpired, and matters are constantly arising which can neither be foreseen nor provided for, concerning which the best interests of the service demand prompt if not immediate action.

“The division of the Territory and districts has not and cannot yield results at all satisfactory, nor can it atone for the evils which are a necessary accompaniment of Arizona being attached to the department of California.

“In a word, there is scarcely a measure taken in San Francisco in regard to affairs in Arizona that could not be better and more intelligently ordered by a commander residing in the Territory, where he could from personal observation learn its wants, resources, geographical features, and the wants and condition of the troops and supply departments.

“This change, under a judicious commander, should lead to a reduction of expenses, and to increased efficiency in all branches of the service.

“The public interest, the interest of the Territory, the credit of the service, and welfare of the soldier, alike require that Arizona be made a separate military department.

“Sacaton, on the Gila, about ninety (90) miles this side of Tucson would be, on account

of its central position, the most eligible point for department headquarters.

“I come now to the consideration of the policy that has been followed in assigning troops to stations in Arizona.

“The effort has evidently been to cover or occupy a vast extent of country with comparatively a small number of troops.

“To accomplish this it became necessary to establish a number of posts, garrisoned by one and two companies.

“The evils of these petty commands are too well known to require special enumeration, but among the most prominent is the large number of men rendered non-effective, from the necessity of employing them in performing ordinary routine duties, the proportion being much greater in commands of one and two companies than in garrisons of five and six companies strong.

“In this way the efficiency of troops is much impaired, discipline seriously injured, and the non-effective force greatly increased, in consequence of the necessity of leaving in camp a large proportion of a command for the protection of public property, etc., whenever it takes the field.

“This policy also multiplies places for incompetent commanders and disbursing officers, besides greatly increasing the expense of the military establishment.

“As an offset to the grave objections which are incident to, and indeed are part and inseparable from, the policy itself, it will be asked

what are the results, and is life and property rendered comparatively secure by this scattering of the troops into small commands and detachments?

“Would that I could reply in the affirmative; but when it is known that men were killed on the road a few miles ahead of and behind me, that animals have been killed and driven off from a corral, not fifty yards distant from a detachment of seven men specially designed for their protection, and that the safety of the detachment itself is probably due to the timely and accidental arrival of fifteen or twenty soldiers, it will be seen that neither life nor property are very secure at this time in Arizona.

“Indeed, it may well be doubted if they have ever been less so, and certainly, since travelling through the Territory in 1857 and 1859, I have never known the roads so dangerous as they are now.

“The remedy for this condition of things I conceive to be the adoption of the opposite policy from that now in existence in Arizona, viz., in the concentration of troops.

“I do not expect or look for any immediate improvement in the state of affairs in the event of concentration becoming the policy for the future, but its adoption would give at all times a large force for operations against Indians, and from several points. As matters now are and have been this is proved to be impracticable.

“Certainly many of the grave evils of the existing policy, set forth above, which officers on the frontier know, feel, and complain of,

should and probably would not be found if the troops were concentrated at several large posts.

“In the Prescott district the only change that seems to me necessary is to concentrate the six companies at one post, within from twenty to thirty miles of Prescott, maintaining outposts at the settlements, if necessary.

“South of the Gila, the only point which I think it necessary or advisable to occupy are Camps Goodwin and Bowie and a point adjoining the site of old Fort Buchanan, which is exceedingly favorable for a large force, especially for cavalry.

“If supplies are to be sent to the posts south of the Gila, through Sonora, Buchanan is the point for the depot.

“At Sacaton, one company would be needed if it became the headquarters of the department.

“The third point demanding attention is the want of more mounted men. There seems to me to be but one way of bringing about this result, and that is to mount infantry. This will render them available in the pursuit of Indians, and will be a strong addition to the effective force in the Territory. As footmen they are of but little service in Indian warfare.

“Eight or ten companies of infantry mounted and armed with a carbine, preferably with Spencer’s, would be ample.

“This done, the troops concentrated, and the Territory organized into a military department, and it will not be long before a marked improvement becomes manifest in the general condition of military affairs in Arizona.

“Infantry companies employed mainly on escort duty need a carbine and pistol. Men of the company at Camp Cady, which is thus engaged, have provided themselves with revolvers at their own expense.

“The introduction of the Spencer carbine throughout the service will more than treble our effective strength.

“Having very recently reported in regard to abandoning El Dorado Canon, it is unnecessary to say more on the subject.

“The subject of providing storehouses, hospitals, and quarters for troops in Arizona is one also meriting attention.

“Quarters are promised the recruit when he enlists, money is annually appropriated by Congress for this purpose and, I may add, is continually squandered by being placed in the hands of unpractical and incompetent officers for expenditure.

“The contentment, comfort, health, welfare, and efficiency of the soldier are so intimately connected with this subject of quarters when in garrison that they cannot be denied them as a rule without creating discontent with the service.

“There are to-day many suffering soldiers in Arizona, soldiers who are suffering unnecessarily, who are exposed to the weather, as the negro of the south or the peasant of Ireland has never been, and this in a climate where the heat is greater and more oppressive than I ever experienced in Texas, the tropics, or elsewhere, where the thermometer ranges every day for

several months from 95° to 115° and 120° in the coolest places.

“If a large post and depot should be located near old Fort Buchanan or elsewhere, the building of it should be committed to a regular quartermaster, and not to inexperienced young officers, as I found to be the case at Camp Goodwin.

“This is one of the duties of the Quartermasters’ Department that should, as far as possible be discharged by officers of the department. Under their superintendency better and cheaper buildings will, as a rule be erected.

“The views set forth, whether sound or not, are my convictions, and, as I interpret my duty as inspector of the division, I feel bound to express them for the consideration of the major general commanding.

“I remain, general, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

“ROGER JONES,

“Major and Assistant Inspector General,
“Inspector General Military Division Pacific.

“Brevet Major General JAMES B. FRY,

“Adjutant General Middle Division of the
Pacific.

“San Francisco, California.

“Official:

“JAMES B. FRY, A. A. G.”

Here follow the remarks of General McDowell on the report of Colonel Jones:

“HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF
CALIFORNIA.

“San Francisco, California,

“August 14, 1867.

“Respectfully returned with the following remarks:

“The state of affairs which the assistant inspector general noticed in Arizona has been well known to me, and has not ceased to engage my attention from the first. But it is not, in my judgment, due to the causes he supposes, and is not to be corrected by the measures he suggests.

“His remedy consists mainly in,

“1st. The creation of Arizona into a separate command, with its commander at some central station, as at Sacaton, for instance.

“2nd. In the concentration of the troops in large commands, as, for instance, the six companies in the district of Prescott, into one post, within from twenty to thirty miles of Prescott, maintaining outposts at the settlements, if necessary, and south of the Gila, having only Camps Goodwin and Bowie, one post near old Fort Buchanan, and a company at Sacaton.

“Had the assistant inspector general been out here for the last two and a half years, he might have been able to discuss this question more satisfactorily with reference to the remedies he proposes, for they have both been tried, and the unsatisfactory condition of affairs he has noticed in the course of his inspection, and

which existed when his proposed measures were in force, would have to be accounted for otherwise than he suggests.

“When I came to the command of the department of the Pacific, in July, 1864, Arizona formed part of the district of New Mexico, and when it was added to my command, its inhabitants were greatly rejoiced. It was a claim to their consideration to have been prominent in having had the change effected. At first I had been averse to having the Territory, but yielded to the desire of others, when I came to see that it drew its supplies from this place, and that I had, in fact, to care for it, without having the authority to control it.

“On its being placed under me, I made of it a district; appointed a general officer to command it; sent him more than a brigade of troops (at one time thirty-six companies), more men, and better men for the purpose, and, with some exception, better officers, than are there now.

“He had full authority in the matter of distributing his troops, in making contracts and purchases for their supply; was furnished with everything he asked for, that had to come from here; had authority to institute courts-martial; and in short had all the authority, in every particular, that I, as department commander, at this moment possess.

“His posts were larger than the assistant inspector-general suggests, for he appreciated, as I most fully do, all the evils of small commands.

“Near old Fort Buchanan, which is one of the points the assistant inspector-general recom-

mends, he had a post of seven companies, four companies at Fort Grant, five companies at Goodwin, four companies at Fort Whipple, at one time six, and six companies at Camp McDowell.

“His headquarters were at Yuma, Prescott, and at the very place suggested by the assistant inspector general, Sacaton.

“His men were of the best; they were self-reliant, intelligent, hardy, quick to take care of themselves wherever sent. He had two successors, who had their headquarters at Sacaton.

“Did this command as thus ordered, and these large posts, give that absolute security to the people and property all over Arizona, without which affairs may be properly said to be unsatisfactory? Were men suffered by the Indians to go alone within their reach, unmolested? Were cattle always safe even under the fire of a sentinel? No.

“The assistant inspector general, speaking of what he calls the results of the present policy, says that men were even killed a few miles ahead of and behind him, and that animals were killed and driven off from a corral not fifty yards from a detachment of seven men specially designed for their protection. Well, the same was done under the state of affairs which he thinks would prove a remedy.

“It is to be well borne in mind, in considering matters in Arizona:

“1st. That the Apache kills and robs as a means of livelihood. It is his normal condition. He has been at it for forty-seven years, if not, indeed, for centuries.

“2nd. That there is no confederation or alliance between the several tribes, frequently none between the bands of the same tribe (or, if there has been, it has been of no practical importance).

“3rd. That the hostile Indians all live in the most remote and inaccessible parts of the Territory, to which it is difficult for the whites, under the most favorable circumstances, to penetrate.

“4th. That the portions of the Territory (with few exceptions) inhabited by the whites, are seamed with mountain ridges, which, like the plains between them, are bare of trees, and from which the roads and the settlements are as plain to the sight of the stealthy Apache, as is the pit of a theatre to a spectator in the gallery.

“5th. That this physical condition of the face of the country enables the Apache to make a sure calculation what to do, and what to avoid. He can, from his secure lookout in the mountain side or top, see for miles off exactly how many persons are moving on the road, and how they are moving; he knows exactly where they must pass, where only they can get a drink of water; he never has occasion to take any risk, and it is his law never to take any.

“6th. That having been at this business for years, and having an exact knowledge of every ridge, every pass and ravine, and being entirely unencumbered with any luggage, camp or garrison equipage, and being able to go for days on an amount of food on which a white man would sink from exhaustion, he can strike and escape before any one but the one stricken has

knowledge of his presence; and if he is too hard pressed to carry off his booty, he has only to abandon it and gain one of the inevitable mountain ridges, and he is safe from any pursuit that a white man, either on foot or horseback, can make.

“Bearing these facts in mind, it is easy to be seen that a large post will not prevent an assassination or a theft. Witness what was done last month, near one of the largest posts in Arizona, where there are five companies, and near which two men were killed while fishing; and what occurred a few days ago in Nevada, where a man, who was fishing near the post, was shot in the head by an Indian concealed behind a rock. Neither large posts nor small posts will prevent these things so long as the Indians are in a state of hostility, any more than murder and robbery will not be committed in the vicinity of a large city. This is well illustrated by the following slip from to-day’s paper, August 14, giving an account of a raid in the vicinity of Prescott, Arizona Territory.

“On Thursday, at noon, a band of Indians jumped the herd kept by Mr. A. G. Dunn, and at the time grazing within half a mile east of the centre of the town of Prescott. An alarm was immediately given and our citizens turned out in force, but being mostly on foot they gave up the chase. In an hour Lieutenant Purdy and twenty-five cavalymen from Whipple were on the track, with several citizens well mounted; but after an absence of twenty-four hours they returned, having been unable to follow the trail. In the herd were five horses belonging to

O. Allen, one to Sheriff Rourke, one to Ben Block, and one to the Governor, making some five or six valuable saddle animals the Indians have taken from him within three years. This is a great country. Yesterday the Indians ran off the stock from Bower's ranch, at the Point of Rocks, seven miles from Prescott, but they were pursued and the stock recovered.'

"But it may be urged large posts are not for defensive purposes; they are to enable large bodies (see report on camp Grant) to move into the mountain fastnesses and homes of the hostile.

"The celerity and, above all, the secrecy of movement of a body decreases with its size. These large posts, established as indicated by the assistant inspector general, would be at a long distance from these mountain fastnesses, and long before the large body, encumbered by its pack train, could gain them, the Indians would know of its movement, and would have fled only to be seen making insulting gestures from a distant mountain ridge, or found hanging on the rear and shooting from some secure hiding place, on the pack train as it wound through some gorge or canyon.

"The reports of expeditions carried on in the way suggested have almost invariably ended with the statement that, after leaving their camp and marching for several days over a barren country, meeting no one, they finally saw smoke from distant hills or mountain ridges answered by other smokes, and after pushing on with their command over almost inaccessible mountains and impassable canyons, they found

their rations would only last them long enough to get back to camp, and so they returned with the men and horses shoeless and used up, their promenade having no other effect than to embolden rather than to subdue the enemy.

“This is illustrated by the following account, taken from to-day’s paper (August 14) of a scout in the Verde district, Arizona Territory.

“‘On the ninth day their track got very fresh, and we ambushed in some willow brush until night. We had been obliged to travel in the day-time, owing to dark nights and the roughness of the country. We were across Salt river, in what is known as the Salt River country. Just about sunset we started, and we had not traveled one hour when we were fired upon from the top of a very steep sided mountain. In fact, it was almost impossible for a man to climb it at all. The first notice we had of them was a volley of balls and arrows. They did not use their guns after the fire, but kept up a cloud of arrows with a perfect looseness, as though ’twas no trouble to make them. None of our men were hit. We returned the fire, but were unable to determine how many, if any, were hit, as at each volley the Indians would drop to the ground. They danced, shouted, and called us all the pet names their vocabulary affords, I presume. We prospected around the mountain and found there was no way to get up to it without the sacrifice of many valuable lives; and then the Indians could run from us, and having been discovered, and many signal smokes having been sent up, we gave it up as a bad job and returned to the post.’

“In other words, to place the troops in large bodies involves with the limited number at command, few posts at a great distance apart, and these posts, as proposed, nearer the whites than the Indians.

“This, in a country like Arizona, would neither protect the settlers nor punish their enemies.

“It may be asked if it is not necessary, for safety as well as efficiency, that a force going after these Indians should be large in order to effect anything. Such does not seem to be the opinion of two of the best commanders in Arizona.

“Brevet Lieutenant Colonel Price, commanding the district of the upper Colorado, reports that in his expeditions after the Indians, he has ascertained, ‘that the Hualapais are a very cowardly race, and that ten good cavalry men could probably disperse the whole tribe if they could be caught on the plain; but they are very fleet runners, and have a large tract of country to range over.

““The most hostile band is led by Chief Cherum (war chief of the Yavapais), in the Cerbat range. They have committed nearly all of the murders and depredations.

““They are well acquainted with the ways and manners of the white man, and many of them are armed with superior weapons, which they well know how to use from behind rocks and safe places. The officers from Prescott say they would prefer fighting five Apaches to one Hualapai.’

“In southern Arizona a detachment of forty officers and men sent out from Camp Wallen, a two-company post, were judged sufficient by one of our most celebrated Indian fighters, Colonel McGarry, to penetrate the haunts of Cochese, which they did successfully, destroying one of his rancherias and putting his men to flight.

“That more was not done was due, the colonel states, not to the want of numbers, but to the broken down condition of the horses when they came up with the Indians.

“With the exception of the troops in the district of the Verde, when they fell into the hands of an officer unsuited to his duty, there has not been a party sent out from a post in Arizona that has not driven the Indians wherever they could come up with them, or find them. One company of cavalry from the district of Prescott, last month dispersed and drove what is reported to be a combination of the Hualapais tribe and the Piutes. (See recent reports of General Gregg and Colonel Price.)

“Take for instance, the expeditions sent out from Camps Wallen, McDowell and Whipple.

“It is, I think, beyond a question that the defect is not in the quantity, but in the quality of the force. It is not so much a large body, but an active one that is wanted—one moving without any baggage, and led by active, zealous officers, who really wish to accomplish something, and who are able to endure fatigue, and willing to undergo great personal privations.

“I grant the existence of all the evils named by the assistant inspector general, as incident to small posts, and were it possible, I would

never have the garrison of a post less than a regiment; and if obliged to make detachments never have one less than two companies, and never suffer these companies to be absent for more than a few months at a time. I would also never send raw recruits into the field, never have artillery act as infantry, or the latter as cavalry. The question with me, however, has been one of necessity, not of choice, or, at least, but a choice of evils.

“The assistant inspector general thinks a better state of affairs would follow if all the six companies in the district of Prescott were concentrated at one camp near the town (within twenty to thirty miles of it), with outposts at the settlements, if necessary. Has he calculated the number of these outposts? If he commenced with sending a few men to this ranch or that mill, other ranches and other mills would ask and have a claim for as much; and then, when all the defensive arrangements were made, some succeeding inspector would have the opportunity of repeating his report, ‘that animals have been driven off from a corral not fifty yards distant from a detachment of seven men, specially designed for their protection.’ And then, how would protection be given the road from La Paz to Prescott over which the supplies have to be hauled? By a detachment from the large camp? How protect the road from Maricopa and Wickenburg, over which the mail is carried between southern and northern Arizona? By another detachment? Thus much for the defensive arrangements. The offensive movements against the Apaches would have to

be carried on as far as beyond the Verde, beyond Grief hill.

“I do not think it well to protect the road from the river, and from the Gila to Prescott, by troops stationed at the latter place. Supplies would have to be hauled to Prescott, and then hauled back over the road. It is a question if the camp at McPherson had not better be at La Paz, where, on the application of the superintendent of Indian affairs, another post will have to be made; and there would be no question, if it were not that the road from the Gila, coming into the La Paz road near McPherson, also needs protection.

“The offensive force given by the ten companies of cavalry is, as has been proven, large enough to go anywhere into Arizona, and the post on the Verde is near enough the haunts of the Indians for the infantry there to accomplish something if they had a commanding officer suited to the service.

“As the assistant inspector general does not mention the district of the Verde, I will not now refer to it.

“As to the arrangement of troops south of the Gila, I find the only change that is suggested is that the posts of Camps Wallen and Tubac should be consolidated into one post at old Fort Buchanan; that the posts at Tucson and Grant should be abandoned. As to the first it is with General Crittenden and Colonel McGarry to do so or not, as they with their experience may judge best. The company at Tucson is necessary for escorting trains, etc., from the depot

to the surrounding posts, and this duty can be better done by detachments from a company there than by drawing one from the more distant camps, and can be maintained at a less cost. I have tried in vain to do away with Camp Grant, and once had issued the order for it to be abandoned but was obliged, by the representations of the commanders and the inhabitants, to re-establish it.

“I come now to the assertions made by the assistant inspector general, ‘that, indeed, it may well be doubted if life and property have ever been less secure in Arizona than at this time.’ He adds, ‘and certainly, since traveling through the Territory in 1857 and 1859, I have never known the roads so dangerous as they are now.’ In justice to myself and the service in Arizona the following facts are to be borne in mind:

“1st. That when the whites first came to Arizona the Apaches were friendly to them. The following extracts are from the journals of Emory and Johnstone of their march to California under General Kearney in 1846:

“‘October 20 * * * The general sent word to the Apaches he would not start until 9 or 10; this gave them time to come in, headed by their chief, Red Sleeve. They swore eternal friendship to the whites and everlasting hatred to the Mexicans. The order, quickness, and quietude of our movements seemed to impress them. One of the chiefs (Apache), after eyeing the general with apparent admiration, broke out in a vehement manner: ‘You have taken New Mexico, and will soon take California; go then and take Chihuahua, Durango, and Sonora,

we will help you. You fight for land, we care nothing for land. We fight for the laws of Montezuma and for food. The Mexicans are rascals; we hate and will kill them all.' * * *

“ ‘November 4. * * * The Apaches gave us to understand that a marauding party of their people were in Sonora. The broad, fresh trail of cattle and horses leading up the Aroya induces us to believe that they have returned, successful, of course.

“ ‘November 5. * * * The bed of this creek was deeply cut, and turned at short angles, forming a zigzag like the boyaux laid by sappers in approaching a fortress, each turn of which (and they were invulnerable), formed a strong defensive position. The Apache, once in possession of them, is secure from pursuit or invasion from the Mexican. * * *

“ ‘Nature has done her utmost to favor a condition of things which has enabled a savage and uncivilized tribe, armed with the bow and lance, to hold as tributary powers three fertile and once flourishing States: Chihuahua, Sonora and Durango, peopled by a Christian race, countrymen of the immortal Cortez. These States were at one time flourishing, but such has been the devastation and alarm spread by these children of the mountains that they are now losing population, commerce, and manufactures at a rate which, if not soon arrested, must leave them uninhabited.’

“ ‘Captain Johnstone says:

“ ‘October 28. * * * Around the south-east base of this is a broad trail leading towards Sonora, where the Apaches go to steal.

“ ‘October 29. * * * About five miles from camp we fell upon the great stealing road of the Apaches. It is hard beaten and in places, many yards wide, filled with horse, mule, and cattle tracks, the latter all going one way from Sonora.

“ ‘October 31. * * * Captain Moore and Carson shook hands with them (Gila Apaches), but they would not be induced to come into camp. They had been dealt with by Americans in the employment of Chihuahua, who had hunted them at \$50 a scalp, as one would hunt wolves, and one American decoyed a large number of their brethren in rear of a wagon to trade, and fired a field piece among them.

“ ‘November 2. * * * Some Apaches (Pinoleros) showed themselves on a hill top early this morning. * * * The high peaks afford fine points for lookouts, upon one of which is always seated one of their number, like a sentinel crow on the highest limb of the adjacent tree, watching over the safety of his thieving fraternity. Their wigwams scarce peep above the low brushwood of the country, being not more than four feet high, slightly dug out in the centre, and the dirt thrown around the twigs which are rudely woven into an oven shape as a canopy to the house. A tenement of a few hours' work is the home of a family for years or a day; like wolves they are ever wandering.

“ ‘November 4. * * * Here we fell into another Indian trail, larger than that we were upon; both were fresh, signs of cattle lately driven from Sonora. These Indians have now

been seventeen years living by the plunder of Sonora; when they are required to stop it will require either money or powder to make them obey.'

"2nd. That they so remained as a general thing until the breaking out of the rebellion.

"3rd. That at the time referred to by the assistant inspector general there were, I think, but two posts in the country now known as Arizona—Forts Buchanan and Breckenridge.

"4th. That all the country north of the Gila was unsettled and almost totally unknown by the whites. Prescott, and the farms and mines near, and the roads leading to it, and all the settlements north of the Gila, were established since the breaking out of the rebellion.

"5th. That if life and property were more secure in 1857 and 1859, it was not because of the existence of a better policy then than is now pursued; not because the one post in southern Arizona gave more protection than do many posts now established, some of which have been much larger than the one referred to. It was due, not to better protection against Indian hostilities, but to the fact that there were fewer hostilities to guard against, and fewer, much fewer, points to guard. The Indians who used to prey on Sonora and Chihuahua now find men and property to murder and steal near their haunts. Instead of the long, broad trails to Sonora mentioned by Johnstone, they now make short ones to the roads and property of the whites in Arizona. All that mountainous country running from northwestern to southeastern Arizona is infested by different bands of hostile Indians, who now have to be guarded against

and who gave no insecurity to the whites in 1857 and 1859. Even in southern Arizona, Cochese's band, which is the only one whose raids we have now to guard against, was friendly.

"The comparison is therefore in every way unjust. A fair one would be between the state of the country as it was when I first took charge, and what it is since 'my policy' has been in operation. The condition of the country when I received it was fully described in my report of March 23, 1866, as follows:

" 'Their (the Apaches) murdering and marauding forays have been carried on from the sixty miles north of Prescott to the Sonora line, all along the valley of the Hassayamp, the Verde, the Agua Fria, the Gila, the Santa Cruz, San Pedro, Sonoita, Arivaipa, and Arrivaca, in Skull valley, on all the roads leading to Prescott and to Wickenburg, and from the Pimas to Fort McDowell—everywhere, in fact, where there was life or property to be taken. The Territory was reduced to so low a point for want of troops, at the time of its being transferred to my command, that it was fast being abandoned. Tubac was entirely abandoned. All the farms in the upper Santa Cruz and in the vicinity of Tucson, on the Sonoita and the San Pedro, were abandoned. Valuable mines were given up, as no one could venture to go into the valley to either cultivate the land or herd the stock, so that the country produced no food.'

"It has so far recovered under the measures I have taken that I was justified in saying in that same report as follows:

* * * * *

“ ‘The valley of the Santa Cruz is again peopled and planted. Every house in Tubac and every farm in its vicinity is occupied. Tucson, I was told by those who were to be believed had improved two hundred per cent.

“ ‘The establishment of Fort McDowell and the raising of two companies of Pimas and Maricopas have given heart to central Arizona.’

“ ‘A most convincing proof of the protection given is in the fact that the flour, beans, and forage raised in Arizona are now sufficient for the citizens and for the troops, and purchased by open competition for the latter at prices one-third and one-fourth and one-half of what has hitherto been paid.

“ ‘Flour is now as cheap in central Arizona as in New York.

“ ‘That part of Arizona between the Pimas and Fort Yuma, which was once the scene of some horrible atrocities committed by the Apaches, is now safely traveled without escorts.

“ ‘The assistant inspector general refers to my having been able to make but one tour through the country in the three years it has been under my command.

“ ‘Arizona was placed under my command in the spring of 1865, and has been under me a little over two years. I visited it as soon as I was able, and I believe I have seen more of it than any department commander ever has; more, I venture to say, than the commander of the department of Missouri has of New Mexico, or the commander of the Gulf has of Texas, or than either of them is likely to see of those countries in the next five years.

“I do not concur in the idea thrown out that I am to visit every post in my department, once a year, if not oftener; I think I have done more of this than is usual; I would do more of it than I do, if I consulted merely my personal inclinations; but I find my presence is more needed, constantly, at headquarters than at any one post of my command. If I am absent my adjutant general or aide must do much in my name without being able to consult me. It should be as little expected of me as that the division commander should visit all the division every two years.

“As an argument for having Arizona under one commander, he refers to the time it took him to make an inspection of the posts in that country, eighty-four days. Of this time but ten to fourteen days were necessary to reach Arizona, and as many to reach this place from that country. It was the very fact he mentions, the time it takes to go from one end of Arizona to the other, and the bad results that came of having a commander, even in a central point like Sacaton, who was to control points, places, and frontiers he could not readily communicate with, that caused the making of several smaller districts, within each of which the commander could be free to act at once, without the necessity of referring to any one on any matter connected with his active field operations.

“This is entirely practicable in Arizona, where no concert of action of any moment exists or is likely to arise on the part of the Indians, who are dispersed over a large extent of broken country, and there is nothing more required of

the commander than activity and energy in his movements, and a thorough study of the country and the habits of hostile Indians.

“The district commanders have no restriction placed on them by me in any matter concerning their movements against those hostile Indians. Their contracts have to come here for my approval, as they would have to do in any case for that of the division commander. Administrative questions connected with the care of public property, money and accounts, have to come here for the same reason.

“Courts are not assembled often in Arizona for the same reason that they are not in Nevada and northern California—the want of officers. The remedy for this is not with me, and would not be with a commander at Sacaton.

“So, at one time since I have had command, there was no mail communication whatever between Arizona and New Mexico, and letters between the Territories went by way of Denver and Utah.

“As to the suggestion made, of mounting infantry, I will not repeat here what I have already said on the subject.

“The assistant inspector general writes with much emphasis as to the necessity of providing storehouses, hospitals, and quarters for troops in Arizona. He has specially referred to this subject in each of his reports, and he is sustained in his general proposition, that increased protection in the way of buildings for men and property should be given, by the recommendation of General Crittenden, and in fact most if not all the district commanders in the Territory.

General Crittenden says as follows in an endorsement on estimate of the commander of Camp Wallen:

“ ‘I am perfectly convinced, since my arrival in the district, that the troops at all posts in this district should be quartered in adobe buildings, for both the health of the troops and as a matter of economy to the government. Indeed I think it is impossible for the troops to retain their health while in tents, especially during the summer season.’ ”

“ ‘With respect to this I transcribe the following from the instructions to Colonel Lovell, of November 8, 1866, in answer to a letter from the commanding officer of Camp Wallen, recommending the erection of buildings at that place, the one concerning which General Crittenden makes the recommendation I have quoted:

“ ‘By orders of April 23, 1866 (Special Orders No. 80), the troops ordered to the upper San Pedro were directed to go into camp, or provide themselves with such shelters as can be made with the means at hand by the labor of men.

“ ‘The camp was established May 10, and yet up to September nothing seems to have been done by any one in Arizona towards providing these shelters for the men, such as have been made hitherto throughout this country, from Washington Territory to the Sonora line.

“ ‘The troops, wherever sent, have always soon made themselves comfortable by their officers’ direction, and by their own labor, and huddled themselves in the same way prospecting miners have done, and are continually doing,

by the use of stone, wood, adobes, poles placed upright and filled in with clay, turf, sods, reeds, willows, etc., and this in places more destitute than at Camp Wallen.

* * * * *

“ ‘You will order that, in making these shelters, the commanding officer shall put them up in the order of time prescribed in General Orders No. 39, for the huts to be built at the camp to be established northeast from Fort McDowell, (Camp Reno). The same provisions as to extra pay to the enlisted men, therein made, will apply in the case of the new camp.’

“I have not authorized more permanent quarters than those which the men could make by their own labor, with the materials at hand, because it was not known, nor could it be ascertained at once where permanent posts would be required.

“The population in this country is so fluctuating (on account of the uncertainty of mining operations), that it frequently happens that before a permanent post is finished the necessity for it has ceased.”

The recommendations of the Inspector-General that a division commander with headquarters in Arizona, be appointed, were afterwards adopted when General Crook was placed in command with full authority to direct the campaign according to his judgment without interference from a superior officer twelve hundred miles removed from the theater of conflict.

CHAPTER XI.

THE MILITARY (Continued).

GENERAL ORDERS AS TO LOCATION OF TROOPS IN ARIZONA — REMARKS OF GENERAL McDOWELL — EASY TIMES FOR GOVERNMENT CONTRACTORS — GENERAL GREGG ORDERS THAT ALL INDIANS OFF RESERVATIONS BE TREATED AS HOSTILES—INTERFERENCE WITH ORDER BY INDIAN AGENT DENT — GENERAL GREGG'S ORDER COUNTERMANDED BY GENERAL McDOWELL — GENERAL McDOWELL CRITICISED BY GOVERNOR McCORMICK—GENERAL McDOWELL'S SECOND ANNUAL REPORT—REPORTS EXPEDITIONS AGAINST THE INDIANS.

“(General Orders No. 39.)

“HEADQUARTERS DEPARTMENT OF CALIFORNIA.

“San Francisco, Cal., October 31, 1866.

“I. The troops heretofore at Fort Grant, and, since the flood there, at the site of old Fort Breckenridge, will be withdrawn from those places, and the stations there abandoned. The public property and stores will be sent, under the direction of the district commander, to such other stations as may be best for the service. The troops will be sent to Fort McDowell, and thence will proceed to establish themselves, as soon as practicable, at the most eligible point beyond the Sierra Ancha, in what has been called Meadow Valley, about eighty-five miles

northeast from Fort McDowell. This place is reported to have good water, an abundance of grass, oak, and pine wood, and some arable land. It is in the midst of the hostile Apaches, and is at present inaccessible to wagons. The district commander is specially charged with the duty of seeing that timely supplies of quartermasters' subsistence, and medical stores and ordnance are sent to Fort McDowell, and afterwards to the new post, for this command.

"II. Preliminary to establishing themselves as above, the companies will proceed to make a good trail from Fort McDowell to their new station, to be improved as far and as soon as possible into a wagon road.

"III. The huts and shelters at the camp will be made by the labor of the enlisted men from the materials at hand, and in the following order, viz.:

"First. The shelter huts for the men and company laundresses, including the mess-rooms; nothing else in the way of building to be commenced until they are finished and occupied.

"Second. Shelter hospital.

"Third. Shelter storehouses.

"Fourth. Shelter huts for officers.

"Fifth. Shelters for horses.

"Dimensions of the huts for officers will be furnished the commanding officer by Colonel Babbitt, and these dimensions will not be exceeded.

"IV. Whilst working more than ten days continuously on the trail and wagon road, and on the huts and shelters at the standing camp

for themselves and their supplies, the enlisted men will be allowed the extra pay provided by the act approved July 13, 1866. Care will be taken to see that the provisions of that act are fully complied with.

“The assistant inspector general is very decided in his language as to the insufficiency of the shelters provided in Arizona, and I submit that, in view of his condemnation of the hospitals at Tucson, Whipple, McDowell, Mohave, etc., which were all found good by the medical director, the building used at Whipple is the finest one in Arizona—his opinion should be received with some allowance. It depends on the standard of comparison whether these shelters merit the condemnation with which he visits them. I know nothing of the huts in Ireland; but have seen plenty of negro cabins that were very comfortable as compared with a tent, and this is the comparison to make. I lived ten years in Mexico, most all the time in a tent, and found the Mexican hacal comfortable in comparison.

“If the officers and men, like at Camp Wallen, prefer to suffer rather than exert themselves, as those before them have done, and had rather live under a shelter tent than to make themselves comfortable, as they have been authorized and ordered to do, their discomfort merits reproaches rather than sympathy. It is seen, from recent reports, that the commanding officer of the camp is now making the shelters which he should have made long ago.

“I sent a saw-mill to southern Arizona, to be used in the pinery to get out lumber for quarters, but it was never set up, and not long since a report of a board of survey came to me condemning the mill as old and worn out, or useless. No one took the trouble to see about it. It was a new mill which never had been used.

“One of the causes of the unsatisfactory state of affairs in Arizona, and which has not been touched upon by the assistant inspector general, is, that of the few officers whom it has been possible to get there with their companies many are not yet suited to the particular kind of service required in that country, and of these many show but a feeble disposition to adapt themselves to it. Coming out of a war of immense proportions, in which many of them have borne a prominent and distinguished part, having passed through all the excitement that it created, they want rest, and the service in Arizona is peculiarly fatiguing and disagreeable. Many look upon the very act of being sent there as a punishment. Again, many have married since the war, or have but rejoined their families since peace was made, and they have their families with them, under circumstances of great privations to those of whom they are naturally most solicitous; many times with young children and no servants. They do not want to live the life of Indian-trackers, and accommodate themselves to that kind of service which only can insure success. Of course there are many exceptions, but this will apply to a large number with whom the personal comfort of their families

and themselves is the most prominent question, and to which all else has to yield.

"I passed an officer, going to his post, carried in an ambulance drawn by four mules, with a six-mule team carrying his baggage, and that of his infantry escort, who were scattered along the road, with their muskets in the wagon. Though cautioned about the danger of moving in this way, he was soon afterwards attacked and killed by the Apaches.

"I met another officer going along with his company, encumbered with his family in such a way as to destroy his efficiency. This was shown when the officer above referred to was attacked, and, when the latter was ordered to go in pursuit, he pleaded that he could not leave his wife alone. He has since resigned.

"In saying what I have, I do not wish to be understood as questioning the gallantry and intelligence of the officers in Arizona, but only as stating that the life and service there is one for which their antecedents have not qualified them.

"IRVIN McDOWELL,

"Brevet Major General Commanding Department.

"Official:

"JAMES B. FRY, A. A. G."

In his remarks General McDowell called attention to the orders issued by him to those in command of certain posts, to provide themselves with shelter for men and officers, using such materials as were at hand, and employing soldiers to do the work. This would seem to

have been a very good policy if it could have been carried out. The expense of building houses on any of the reservations was excessive, when done by private contract. It was said that every adobe made at Camp Grant cost the government twenty dollars, gold.

There is no doubt but what at this time contractors of all kinds, supplying either food, forage or labor for building, had a "picnic." Even if, as was charged, they had some times to divide with quartermasters, yet it required but a few contracts of any kind, made with the military, to place the contractor upon easy street financially.

In the paper accompanying these reports it is shown in one case where about eleven thousand tons of hay disappeared, the inference being that it was taken by "trade rats" of the biped species who, in exchange therefor, received a quartermaster's certificate.

The ordinary trade-rat is found everywhere in the Arizona desert. He surrounds his hole with cholla cacti to protect it from rattlesnakes; he robs mines of candles and cabins of food and articles useful to him, leaving a rock or something useless in place of the thing taken.

The general calls attention to the reduced cost of produce to the army posts, on account of the increased production of necessities of life by the farmers of the Territory, which however, was attended by great loss of life and property.

About this time the River Indians were on the warpath according to the statement of Charles B. Genung, contained in Volume 4 of this his-

tory. This was caused by the lack of food and employment on the Mohave Reservation. George W. Dent, a brother-in-law of President Grant was general Indian Agent for the Territory. President Grant's loyalty to his friends has never been questioned, his one weakness being to stick to his friends, right or wrong, protecting them at every mark of the road. Dent was either lacking in administrative qualities, or else he possessed too much of that peculiar kind which sometimes enriches the individual at the expense of the public.

General Gregg issued an order instructing his subordinates to treat as hostiles all Indians found off their reservations. When this order was promulgated, Dent immediately interfered, and wrote the following letter to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs:

“TERRITORY OF ARIZONA,

“Office of Superintendent of Indian Affairs.

“La Paz, March 5, 1867.

“SIR: I have to report to your office another melancholy massacre of American citizens by the Apaches of Central Arizona.

“On the 2nd instant, two teams belonging to a resident of La Paz, returning from Prescott in charge of two drivers and accompanied by five other men, were fired into with guns by a party of about forty Apaches, at a place in the open country sparsely covered with sage brush, and the two drivers and one traveler killed. The scene of the casualty was about eight miles on the La Paz side of Date Creek. Two of the

travelers were wounded and escaped, and the two remaining escaped unhurt. The Indians destroyed part of the harness of the teams, rifled the wagons and ran off the stock, consisting of eighteen mules and four horses.

“About three hours after the occurrence another train of wagons came up, and, being prepared, attempted to recover the stock. They followed them to a canyon in the mountains to the north of the road, when they were charged by the Indians and repulsed and the Indians thus made off with the entire booty. After burying the dead by the roadside they proceeded to town and reported the foregoing.

“This depredation occurred on a part of the road heretofore regarded as safe against the hostiles, and is additional proof of the increasing boldness of the Apaches. By recent order of the military commanding officer a military patrol will be stationed between here and Date Creek, and the efficiency of the troops will be tested.

“It is somewhat believed here, but I cannot report it officially, that some of the young men of the Yavapais and Mohaves join with the Apaches in their depredations. Such is the strength of sentiment and belief that should a reasonable proof be made of such coalition, the whites would retaliate on the friendly river Indians and sacrifice them mercilessly. I have steadily aimed to keep down this spirit, while the real proof is pending; but if, as I say, proof should be had of such joining with the Apaches, no force, either the influence of the Indian department, the check of truly friendly chiefs, or

the military arm can prevent a general massacre of the river bands. It is to be hoped that the presence of troops soon to be placed on the road where the late depredation was committed, with orders adequate to the occasion, will check and prevent any coalition of the bands.

“Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

“GEORGE W. DENT,

“Superintendent Indian Affairs, A. T.

“Hon. L. V. BOGY,

“Commissioner Indian Affairs, Washington,
D. C.”

He enclosed the following copy of a treaty he said he had made with the river Indians:

“At a convention held at the office of the Arizona superintendency at La Paz on the 21st day of March, A. D. 1867, in the presidency of G. W. Dent, superintendent of Indian Affairs, between delegations of the Mohave Tribe of Indians and the Chemehuevis tribe of Indians, for the purpose of concluding peace between these two bands, and restoring and confirming amity:

“The Chemehuevis were personally present by Pan Coyer, their head chief, and certain of his captains and head men, and the Mohaves were personally present by Iretaba, their head chief, and certain of his captains and head men, and after full conference the two bands agreed upon the following terms, to wit:

“1st. All hostilities heretofore existing between Mohaves and Chemehuevis cease on and after this day, and perpetual amity shall exist between the two bands.

"2nd. The Mohaves shall occupy and cultivate the lands on the left bank of the Colorado river, and the Chemehuevis the lands on the right bank of the Colorado river; provided that Indians of either band may freely visit and travel over either country, and shall not be molested therein either in their persons or their property.

"3rd. It is also agreed between the parties to this agreement that they will use their best exertions to prevent the members of either of the tribes from committing any depredations upon the persons or property of American citizens in the country occupied by them, and should any such depredations be committed that they will endeavor to recover property taken and bring the offenders and deliver them to the superintendent of Indian Affairs at La Paz.

"In testimony of the above agreement we have set our hands and our seals at La Paz, Arizona, on the day and year first written.

"IRETABA, his + mark (Seal),

"Head Chief of Mohaves.

"PAN COYER, his + mark (Seal),

"Head Chief of the Chemehuevis.

"Signed and sealed in the presence of—

"G. W. DENT,

"Special Indian Agent, Colorado River Indians.

"CHARLES HUTCHINS.

"Official:

"JOHN H. COSTER,

"Aid-de-camp."

The order of General Gregg referred to was:

“(General Orders No. 3.)

“HEADQUARTERS DISTRICT OF PRESCOTT.

“Camp Whipple, A. T., April 23, 1867.

“The increasing number of Indian depredations committed throughout this district renders it necessary, in order to remove doubt, to announce what tribes are considered hostile and against whom hostilities may be carried on.

“The following tribes are announced hostile, viz.: The Hualapais, the Chemehuevis, the Tonto, the Apache Tonto and the Apache Mohave, and all other tribes or parts of tribes within the limits of this district, including the Mohaves and other Indians, purporting to be friendly, except when the latter are found within the limits of the reservations on the Colorado river, or when acting in conjunction with the troops as guides or otherwise.

“By order of Brevet General GREGG:

“A. E. HOOKER,

“First Lieut. and Adjutant 8th Cavalry, A. A.
A. G.

“Official:

“JOHN H. COSTER, A. D. C.”

On May 18th, 1867, General McDowell, acknowledged the receipt of General Gregg's order, through his Adjutant-General, and made the following order countermanding the same:

“I am instructed by the department commander to say in reference to those orders that,

as he is at present informed, and so far as he can at this distance judge of them, it seems to him you have declared war on many Indians with whom it might be possible to continue friendly relations. You unquestionably 'remove doubt' as you express it, but you have given the doubt in favor of hostilities against tribes of all kinds whatsoever who may not be on the Indian reservation.

"With respect to that reservation the following is from the last annual report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs:

" 'Arizona. * * * Plans to colonize the tribes known as the River Indians, the Yavapais, Hualapais, etc., upon a reservation on the Colorado river, set apart for them by Congress two years ago, have been considered and presented to the department, but for want of necessary funds nothing of a permanent character has been done. Nevertheless, the superintendent and Agent Feudge, who was more directly in charge of the enterprise, succeeded in inducing a considerable number of the Mohaves and of the tribes above named to commence planting. By the August report it appeared that the tribes, many of the members of which had been disposed to hostility, were peacefully at work, and that for the first time in months trains were moving between the river and Prescott, the capital of the Territory, without interruption. The first crops planted by the Indians were swept away by a flood in the river, and another rise had also occurred, the effect being so to saturate the ground as to assure the Indians of a successful crop.'

“The foregoing extract (given in full) shows that there is but one reservation on the river for all the tribes named in your general order. This is understood to be below Williams Fork, and therefore beyond the limits of either of the districts (Upper Colorado and Prescott) now under your command. This reservation, though set apart by Congress, is not yet established, and the Indian department is not in a condition at this time to support these Indians on it. Yet, by your general order, if the Indians whom the agent has succeeded in drawing to the reservation are found away from it for the purpose of hunting, under a condition of things where they must hunt or starve, you order that the permit of the agent shall not be regarded, and the Indians shall be declared hostile.

“Many of the Mohaves and the Hualapais have hitherto been living quietly in the vicinity of Fort Mohave and on the bottom lands along the Colorado river, raising food for themselves and for sale, and procuring wood for the steamers plying on the river, transporting the supplies for the government, and the miners and other settlers in the Territory. By your General Order No. 3 these Indians are declared hostile, and war is to be waged on them.

“Thus far the Indians complained of have, as is alleged, confined themselves to stealing stock, and it must be said that if the government has as yet made no provision for them in the one reservation set apart for them, and you forbid their being allowed to go hunting because some of them have abused the privilege, they have some excuse to plead also, as the whites have

done, having acted upon one of the first great laws of nature.

"The general commanding is quite sure you cannot have fully considered the effect of your two general orders, and he directs you to reconsider and modify them, and make no war on Indians not in hostility with the settlers, and that you aid the Indian department as far as possible in co-operating with its agents. That Indians steal when they find property on which they can lay their hands is not surprising, under the state of affairs now existing in Arizona. This, of course, is much to be regretted, but it is not a matter for which the military authorities are responsible, and the general is not disposed to authorize an indiscriminate warfare on whole tribes on a suspicion that some of their members, or some of another tribe, perhaps, have committed theft.

"I have the honor to be, very respectfully,
your obedient servant,

"JOHN P. SHERBURNE,
"Assistant Adjutant General."

"Brevet Brigadier General J. I. GREGG,
Colonel 8th U. S. Cavalry, Com'dg Dis-
tricts of Prescott and Upper Colorado,
Fort Whipple, A. T.

"Official:

"JOHN P. SHERBURNE, A. A. G."

Under the orders of his superior officer, General Gregg was compelled to modify his orders in reference to hostile Indians, thus leaving the settlers of Northern Arizona at the mercy of predatory bands, who did not fail to kill, plun-

der and destroy whenever and wherever it was to their advantage to do so. For his interference with General Gregg, General McDowell was severely criticised by Governor McCormick who in this controversy supported General Gregg.

In his second annual report, dated September 14th, 1867, General McDowell gives the following resumé of Military and Indian Affairs in Arizona:

“ARIZONA.

“11. DISTRICT OF TUCSON — Camp Goodwin, on the upper Gila; Camp Bowie, Apache Pass; Camp Wall, Upper San Pedro; Camp Tubac, Tubac; Camp Lowell, Tucson; Camp Grant, Lower San Pedro. The camps of this district have afforded as fair a measure of protection to the settlements as the circumstances have admitted.

“The most active operations have been in the southern part against Cochese’s band of Apaches, who continued to keep up active hostilities against the southern settlements, and have, during the past year, killed many citizens and destroyed much property. The expeditions sent out from Camp Wallen have been successful, and have partially and temporarily checked the inroads of the Indians.

“The southern part of the Territory has been at certain seasons of the year subject to intermittent fevers to such an extent as to prostrate a large part of the force, and cause many changes to be made in the camps, in the hope of getting to a healthy site.

“Camp Wallen seems, at last, to have been made comfortable and healthy, the labor of the men on the ruins of an old Mexican house having given them sufficient shelter for themselves and their supplies.

“The remainder of the force in the southern part of the Territory has been temporarily quartered, free of expense, in houses in Tubac, which the owners were glad to offer for the increased protection they would receive from the troops being relieved from having to build themselves shelters.

“General Crittenden has recommended the building of the permanent camp near the site of old Fort Buchanan, where there are many adobes, made before the war, and which can be used in new buildings. It is proposed to commence this in November next, the labor to be done chiefly by the men with the materials at hand. When built, the post at Tubac will be discontinued.

“There has been much complaint as to the insufficient shelters heretofore provided for the troops in Arizona, but the recent order from the War Department on the subject of shelters for troops has only been anticipated in the orders from these and division headquarters.

“The troops have been required to make temporary shelters for themselves and their supplies by their own labor with the materials at hand. The principal difficulty in southern Arizona arises from the scarcity of timber and lumber.

“At Camp Grant the commanding officer made, without authority, an impracticable

treaty with some of the Indians near the station. General Crittenden subsequently saw the Indians, and made a new agreement with them, which they broke in a few days after making it. Some of them have, however, since come in and submitted to military control.

“In order to give a greater force at other points, I endeavored to break up this camp, but found the need of it so great that it had to be continued, and the commanding officer has been authorized to make adobe shelters for his command to the extent necessary for a post of this character.

“Camp Goodwin is intended as a guard for such of the Indians as submit themselves to military control in that part of the Territory. It has been found very difficult to retain the Indians on even a reservation of the extent of the one at this post. There are frequent charges made by persons at a distance, of depredations committed by these Indians, who, it is said, steal away, and rob or murder, as has been their custom. The commanding officer denies this, and has shown, at least in one instance, that these charges are not true. It will undoubtedly take much time to break up the habits of generations, and those who expect an immediate cessation of all hostilities or molestations from these people are most likely to be disappointed.

“I am still, however, convinced that mere force will not so soon accomplish the subjugation of these mountain robbers, as force and care of those who profess to submit, combined.

“The transportation of supplies to this section of the Territory has heretofore been a

heavy item of expense, even under the most favorable circumstances. Last year it was enormously so; but this has had the effect to produce much competition this year, and the price is nearly two-thirds less than it was, but this has been done by contractors who expect to send their trains from the coast of the Gulf of California through Sonora.

"It is much to be desired that Mexico should be induced to make a port of entry at Libertad, so that the freighters should have no difficulty in using that port to disembark their stores. It would then be supplied with lighters, and all facilities necessary, and which are now wanting at that place, for a port.

"12. DISTRICT OF THE VERDE—Camp McDowell.—The troops at this post were employed with good effect by Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel Sanford in two very important and entirely successful combats with the hostile Apaches, killing and capturing a large number, and destroying large quantities of their property.

"Wishing to follow up his successes, and force the Apaches in this district to submit, I endeavored to establish a camp in the heart of their mountain fastnesses, and gave orders to that effect last autumn; but owing to many circumstances I have thus far failed to get accomplished my purpose, and have to postpone it till a more favorable opportunity.

"Besides the important successes of Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel Sanford, some others have been obtained by other parties from this camp, one by the Pima and Maricopa scouts.

“Twice, lately, the Indians near this camp have sent in word to the commanding officer that they wish to be at peace with the whites. But they have so little confidence in us, and we so little in them, that it is difficult to say whether anything positive is likely to come of their application. I have instructed the commanding officer that if they will submit to military control they will be provided for.

“Ninety of the one hundred Indian scouts allowed this department have been allotted to the districts of the Verde and Tucson. The commanders of each bear witness to their efficiency in hunting, trailing, and fighting the Apaches. They have proved most valuable auxiliaries to the regular troops. Their peculiar knowledge of the country and habits of the Apaches makes them, in some capacity, indispensable. I wish that authority could be had for a still greater number. They are a cheap and effective force for local purposes. There is also in Arizona a class of men who are, on some accounts and for some purposes, even better than the Indians—those who were born there or have been a long time in the country. They would not be well suited to army life and discipline, particularly under the officers who are now in the Territory, who are unacquainted with it or its inhabitants; but who, were they employed for a few months at a time, or for some particular service, and under the lead of some of their own number, would be of great use in the peculiar kind of warfare which has to be carried on in that country.

“Many of the settlers would, I have reason to believe be willing to go out for an expedition, could they be furnished with ammunition, food and transportation. Many have done so without any aid, and I think it well worth the while to obtain authority to furnish these supplies for any parties whose services any district commander may accept for an expedition against the Indians.

“13. DISTRICT OF PRESCOTT—Camp Lincoln, on the upper Verde; Camp McPherson, La Paz road; Fort Whipple, Prescott.—The two cavalry companies in this district have done excellent service against the hostile Indians, and killed and captured a large number, and destroyed much of their (to them) valuable property.

“In one of the combats Captain J. W. Williams, eighth cavalry, was badly wounded. I regret the loss of the services of this gallant and most effective officer, and am glad to learn that his wound is not so serious as at first reported.

“The commander of this district, actuated by some motive I have not been able to appreciate, issued orders declaring war on all Indians in his command, save those employed with the troops, or on a reservation on the Colorado river. This unnecessary act was as impolitic as it was unjust, for we had more enemies than we had troops to combat them. He was therefore required to reconsider and modify his orders, and only war on hostile Indians.

“As his subsequent conduct was unsoldierly, and caused a good deal of correspondence, and has affected the public service in his district, I

submit herewith a special report in the case, in connection with the despatch of Mr. Dent, superintendent of Indian affairs for Arizona, dated March 5, 1867.

“14. DISTRICT OF THE UPPER COLORADO—Camp Mohave; Camp El Dorado.—The Indians in this district, as mentioned in my last report, have been brought into hostility with the whites; whether necessarily or unnecessarily—as it was not by any act of any one in the military service, is no longer a question.

“They have done much damage, and have kept employed a large part of the force I had hoped to employ elsewhere. They have also affected with a spirit of hostility the Piutes heretofore friendly, and there is danger of this hostility extending up the Colorado and to the Salt Lake and Los Angeles road.

“I have sent as large a force as possible to re-enforce Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel Price, commanding the district, and he has now nearly five hundred men, and was by the last account about to take the field, with good prospect of success. The country is, however, very much broken, and the Indians very active, and have become well armed; and it is not at all improbable the colonel may have to take much longer time than I have allowed him before he succeeds in his campaign.

“That he might have as large a force as possible, I have temporarily attached Major Clendenin, with a company of cavalry under orders for Camp McDowell, to his command; and as the mining operations seemed to have been, at least for the present, suspended or abandoned

at El Dorado, and the trade to Salt Lake, by way of the Colorado, seemed to be broken off, and the company at El Dorado was suffering where it was, and the troops were needed for active field operations elsewhere, I authorized him to withdraw all the company except a small guard, and use it in his approaching campaign.

“15. DISTRICT OF THE LOWER COLORADO—Fort Yuma.—This district contains the principal depot for receiving and forwarding the supplies to the country north of the Gila, and the reserve supply for the whole Territory. During the year the depot was accidentally burned, and with it a large quantity of public property. For fear that the troops might be depending on some of the supplies thus lost, a steamer was engaged to take to the mouth of the river such articles as the place seemed to be most likely in need of. They have arrived as have other cargoes sent by sailing vessels, and no danger is now felt of the troops being in want by reason of the accident. The depot is being rebuilt.

“The company of artillery ordered from Fort Yuma, to obtain a force to go to Sitka, leaves this post with but a single company of infantry, from which a detachment is kept up at old Fort Gaston, on the Colorado river, a few miles above the Gila.

“16. I am continually receiving complaints of the insufficient number of troops provided for the defense of the settlements against the hostile Indians. The governors of Nevada and Arizona have been earnest in their representa-

tions that more troops should be sent to their State and Territory. As I have sent all I have—which I know is a full share of what has been sent to the Pacific Coast—the question of increased military force for this country is one for the War Department to determine, with reference to the strength of the army and its needs elsewhere. I can only say that an additional force would be of great benefit to this country; is much needed, and that it would be good economy to employ it. I am, however, constrained to say that, for Arizona, I think it far preferable that a temporary irregular force be authorized to be retained, in the same way as is provided by law for the Indian scouts.

“17. The hostilities in that country are made by Indians who live in the mountainous parts of the Territory, where nature has combined everything to favor the life of murder and rapine they lead. They require a peculiar kind of warfare, and a peculiar force to carry it on successfully.

“It is not so much a large force as an active one that is needed. It is more like hunting wild animals than any kind of regular warfare. The Indians are seldom in large bodies, and never take any risk. They move with great celerity, unencumbered with any baggage, and when out on their forays can seldom be overtaken. When they are, and are pressed, they give way and disperse among the mountains and ravines, so that it is impossible to follow them. The most that is done in such cases is to cause them to abandon any animals they may be carrying off. They can only be successfully fought by troops who

carry on an offensive warfare against them, who do not wait till they have attacked, for in such cases but little is ever accomplished, but who fight them in their own way; take no baggage, move by night, and hide during the day; creep upon their camps, and rush upon them by surprise. When this is done, no matter by how few or how many, they always fly, and then seek to do what damage they can by firing from some safe cover. In these cases, it is in the first few minutes that everything is done.

“In view of this, and of the great expense it requires to obtain these few minutes, it is, I think, the highest economy to place in the hands of those who have to improve them, the best arms we have, some repeating rifle that will give them from five to fifteen shots without loading.

“18. The need of sending off immediately to the scene of Indian hostilities all the men that were sent to me has made it necessary to send companies to the field as soon as they were organized, and in all cases with an insufficient number of officers, and many times with officers of other companies or corps. This, and the mistaken notion many men have that California is filled with gold, which they will be able to pick up in the first stream they come to, or that it exists in such quantities and in such conditions that a man can soon gather it and become wealthy, together with the hard service required of the troops in this Indian hunting, have combined to cause many desertions. The evil, which has become serious, is beyond my control, nor can I charge it upon any one.

“I send herewith the reports of successful Indian combats, and copies of the orders announcing them to the department.

“I have the honor to be, very respectfully,
your obedient servant,

“IRVIN McDOWELL,

“Brevet Major General, Commanding Department.

“Brevet Major General J. B. FRY,

“Assistant Adjutant General, Headq'trs Mil.
Div. of the Pacific, San Francisco, Cal.”

CHAPTER XII.

THE MILITARY (Continued).

MAJOR GENERAL HALLECK'S REPORT FOR 1867-68—DESCRIBES CONDITIONS IN ARIZONA—URGES THAT MORE TROOPS BE SENT TO ARIZONA—EXPEDITIONS AGAINST HOSTILE INDIANS—FREQUENT DESERTIONS OF SOLDIERS—REPORT OF BRIGADIER GENERAL THOMAS E. DEVIN OF EXPEDITION AGAINST THE HOSTILES.

Under date of September 22nd, 1868, Major General H. W. Halleck, who had succeeded General McDowell in command of the Pacific, made his report to the Secretary of War, in which report he had the following to say in regard to conditions in Arizona:

“This Territory has an area of some 104,000 square miles. There are no very reliable data in regard to its population, but a means of various estimates would place it at about 8,000 whites and 15,000 Indians. The military force in the Territory consists of two full regiments of infantry, and nine companies of cavalry; in all 29 companies that is, nearly one-half of all the troops in the division available for service in the field. Nevertheless, considerable dissatisfaction has been shown by the inhabitants because more troops were not sent to that Territory. This could not be done by me from the small force at my disposal without depriving other States and Territories of their propor-

tionate share of protection in places where Indian hostilities existed or were threatened.

“These troops in Arizona are distributed as follows: At Fort Mojave, two companies for the protection of the depot, with outposts on the road to San Bernardino; at Camp Willow Grove, two companies for the protection of the road from Mojave to Fort Whipple, and operations against the hostile Hualapais; at Fort Whipple, two companies for defending depot and operations against the Apaches; at Camp McPherson, one company to protect road and mail from La Paz to Prescott; at La Paz, one company for duty at Indian reservation; at Camp Lincoln, two companies to protect settlers on the Verde, and operate against Apaches east of that river; at Camp McDowell and the outpost of Camp Reno, five companies to guard depot and operate against Apaches between the Verde and Salinas rivers; at Fort Yuma (in an appended footnote General Halleck says: Fort Yuma is in the State of California, but is included in the military district of Arizona), one company to guard main depot of supplies; at Camp Lowell, Tucson, one company to guard depot of supplies for southern Arizona; at Camp Grant, three companies to protect roads and settlements, and to operate against Apaches; at Camp Goodwin, three companies to protect roads and settlements, and to operate against Apaches; at Camp Bowie, one company to guard an important pass and check hostile incursions by Indians from New Mexico; at Camp Wallen, two companies. This post was established to prevent hostile incursions by the Sonora

Apaches, and especially by the band of Cochise. As it had signally failed to accomplish either of these objects, it is probable that its location was not judicious. At Camp Crittenden, three companies. The troops were removed from Tubac to this place as being a more healthy position. They are intended for general operations against Apaches in southern Arizona.

“The locations of these several posts were determined by General McDowell after frequent personal visits to all parts of that Territory, and after consultations with officers fully acquainted with the topography of the country, and of large experience in operations against the Apaches. They should, therefore, be changed only after mature deliberation and upon the most satisfactory evidence that their location is erroneous. I have interfered only to prevent what I considered too great a division and scattering of our forces. To properly locate a military post in an Indian country, an officer should have a knowledge of the topography of the country, the dangers threatened, and the means of averting or surmounting them. As General McDowell possessed this knowledge in a remarkable degree, I have felt the less disposed to change or overrule any distribution of troops in Arizona which he proposed or ordered.

“In northern Arizona the troops under Generals Devin, Price and Alexander have been, during the past year, actively engaged in scouts, and their operations have been attended with very considerable success. Much of the country lying between Verde and Salinas rivers, heretofore unknown, has been explored, and

Apaches shown that we can now penetrate to their secret haunts and homes. As soon as proper depots of supplies can be established, these explorations will be renewed with every prospect of favorable results.

“The efficiency of the forces south of the Gila has not been so manifest, and their operations have been less successful.

“The details of the military operations in Arizona during the past year are given in the several reports forwarded through department headquarters. Arizona has been greatly misrepresented, even by its own people. It has been described as a wonderfully rich mineral country, abounding in lodes and mines of gold and silver, of such surpassing wealth, that any man who could work them could, in a few months, accumulate a fortune of millions. But these mines of fabulous wealth, if they really exist, are as yet undeveloped, and perhaps undiscovered. I do not mean to say there are no valuable mines in Arizona, but simply that the products of these mines have never equalled the sanguine anticipations and representations of their owners, and that the failure of expected dividends to anxious stockholders has not been entirely due to the want of military protection, as is so commonly alleged. But this Territory has interests and resources other than its minerals, and I have little doubt that in a few years its agricultural products will far exceed in value the yield of its mines of gold, silver, and copper, however rich they may prove to be. In many parts of the country the soil is exceedingly rich, and crops of all kinds are most

abundant. Its climate is favorable for the growth of most kinds of grain and fruits, and its grass lands are so extensive and rich that the traveler is surprised to learn that the beef and mutton consumed is mostly obtained from Texas and California, and still more that much of the bread eaten is made of flour imported from California and Sonora. There can be little doubt that when the Territory shall receive an immigration of thrifty farmers, it will become one of the most prosperous countries on the Pacific slope. But farmers and stockraisers are ever more exposed to Indian depredations, and require more military protection in a country infested by hostile Indians, than miners in the development of their mines. The farmer's wealth consists in his cattle and crops; and if these are destroyed, he is often utterly ruined. The miner's principal wealth is in his mines, which the Indians cannot destroy, although they may cripple his operations for a time by robbing him of his work animals, tools, and his supplies. Notwithstanding the too frequent raids of Apaches, and the ruin which they have caused to many ranches, the farming interest in Arizona has made considerable progress within the last two years. Many posts are now mainly supplied by the products of the country, and at prices nearly fifty per cent less than formerly.

"It will be seen from this summary that, while there is a considerable military force in the territory, the number available for scouts and field operations is small, and that this field force cannot be increased without leaving unprotected many necessary depots of supplies

and important mining and agricultural districts. I, therefore, respectfully and most urgently repeat my recommendation of last year, that an additional force of one or two regiments of infantry be sent to this division for service in Arizona. The troops now there will be able to hold their present positions and to make gradual advances upon the enemy until he is finally subdued or destroyed. But this process must be a slow one. With the additional troops asked for, the operation will be greatly facilitated, the desired result attained in less time, and the total cost of the war greatly diminished.

“I call attention, also, in this connection, to the fact that the health of the troops in southern Arizona will soon render it necessary to exchange them for those at more northerly posts, say in California and Oregon. But to make this exchange will require several months, and, in the meantime, many posts would be so reduced as to be unsafe, and all would be too weak for any field operations against the hostile Indians. If an additional regiment of infantry be sent to the division, these changes can be effected gradually and without serious detriment to the service.

“The law authorizing the employment of Indian scouts limits the number to 1,000, of which only 200 are assigned to this division. If this number could be doubled, at least on the coast, it would greatly facilitate military operations in Arizona. Officers are unanimous as to the value and usefulness of these scouts in the field.

“I beg leave to reproduce the following extracts from my annual report of last year:

“ ‘The Apaches and cognate tribes in Arizona and northern Sonora are the natural and hereditary enemies of the whites, of whatsoever nation or character. They have successfully expelled from that Territory the Aztecs, the Spaniards and the Mexicans; and they will yield to our people only when compelled to do so by the rifle and the revolver. They probably resemble the African Bedouins more than any other people; and murder and robbery constitute almost the sole occupation of the Apaches. These Indians do not fight in masses, like most of the tribes of the Rocky Mountains, but more stealthily in small bands over the greater portions of Arizona and the northern part of Sonora and Chihuahua, waylaying and murdering travelers on the roads, and plundering and destroying unprotected agricultural and mining settlements. This mode of warfare, combined with the rough and desert character of the country, and the want of practicable roads, renders it very difficult to operate successfully against them, or to give adequate protection to the small and scattered settlements in that extensive but sparsely populated Territory.

“ ‘It is useless to negotiate with these Apache Indians. They will observe no treaties, agreements, or truces. With them there is no alternative but active and vigorous war, till they are completely destroyed, or forced to surrender as prisoners of war.’

“Another year’s experience has confirmed the correctness of these remarks. But what is to

be done with these Indians when captured or surrendered as prisoners of war? The agents of the Indian bureau, as a general rule, refuse to receive them, and the military have no funds or authority to establish special military 'reservations' for them. To keep and to guard them at military posts will require the whole force of the garrison, and prevent the troops from operating in the field. We have no available funds with which to purchase seeds and agricultural implements, so that they can be made to contribute to their own support; and to keep them in idleness for any length of time has a most injurious effect. If permitted to hunt and fish for their own support, they are certain to desert and resume hostilities. It is hoped that some steps may be taken to modify our Indian system, at least in Arizona, so as to obviate these very serious difficulties in the reduction of the Apaches and the pacification of the Territory. I respectfully repeat my recommendations of March last, that Arizona, with the three most southerly counties of California, be made a separate military department. I believe this change to be essential to the discipline of the troops and the proper direction of military operations there. The present department of California is of so great a geographical extent, with so many posts distant from each other, and connected by roads and mountain trails difficult to travel, that the department commander cannot make the personal inspections and give to its affairs that personal supervision which are absolutely required. Making Arizona a separate department will not only be

of advantage to that Territory, but will give a better supervision to military affairs in California and Nevada. General Ord fully concurs with me in this recommendation.

“It gives me pleasure to report that the opening of new roads and the settlement and cultivation of land in the vicinity of the military posts have greatly reduced the cost and transportation of army supplies in the division generally. Still further reductions may be hoped in the future.

“The locations of the several military posts in the division are designated on the accompanying maps.

“Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

“H. W. HALLECK,

“Major General Commanding.”

During this year several expeditions were carried out against the hostiles, in which a few Indians were killed and rancherias destroyed, the particulars of which are not given in General Halleck's report. General Ord, in his report dated September 27th, 1868, calls attention to the frequent desertions, saying:

“In Arizona the men have been occupied in pursuit of the Indians, scouting, and on escort duty. They have been but in few cases able to build quarters; at some of the forts the troops are yet living in tents, or under earthen roofs and mud walls. Timber is so scarce in many parts of the State of Nevada, and in Arizona Territory, that at some posts it has been at times impossible to procure a sufficient number of boards to make coffins for the dead.

“The consequences of these discomforts, and the want of vegetables, is many desertions, especially from the posts where commanders were careless of the comfort of their men, and failed to make use of such means as the country afforded in providing for them such necessities as vegetable gardens, airy rooms, though built of adobes, and plenty of good water. Every effort has been made by me to remedy these wants, and some additional expense incurred which will, by increasing the comfort of the troops in quarters, diminish the number of desertions, and make them more healthy and efficient in the field. At one post inspected by me I found that its garrison of 86 men had lost 54 men by desertion, and every deserter had carried off a good horse and repeating rifle, worth together from \$150 to \$300 at the post. These horses and arms are generally sold to the citizens in the vicinity for half or a third of their value, so that the citizen finds more profit in encouraging desertion by buying the deserter's arms, horse and clothing, than in arresting him for the small reward of about \$20 in gold. Commanding officers would prosecute such citizens in many cases if they were authorized to employ counsel, for there is scarcely ever in the vicinity of such remote posts a United States district attorney, or other person to act as such.

“I would recommend as some preventive to this wholesale purchase of deserters' clothing, arms and horses, that whenever a citizen, or soldier returned a deserter, or his horse, arms or clothing, the person making the return should be paid the value of such articles as might be

returned, and the actual cost of apprehension in addition to the \$30 now paid, all of which money should be paid on delivery of the man or his property, and upon a certificate to that effect from the officer to whom he or it may be delivered; at present many officers refuse to give the certificates of delivery until the man is convicted, which acts as a bar to the zeal of persons who might be otherwise disposed to arrest deserters."

The most important progress made by the military during this year is contained in the following report made by Brigadier General Thomas E. Devin who commanded the Sub-District of Prescott, which report is dated June 12th, 1868:

"Headquarters Sub-District of Prescott.

"Fort Whipple, A. T., June 12, 1868.

"Colonel: I have the honor to report my return from a 45 days' scout into the Apache country, to the east of this post, in pursuance of instructions from headquarters district of Arizona, directing me to move with my available force in a southeast course from Camp Lincoln towards Goodwin, and as far as the headwaters of the San Carlos, on which I would find the hostile Pinal Apaches, who now appeared disposed to fight, and give us a favorable opportunity to punish them. No operative movements would be made from other points.

"The above instructions were received at this post April 25, and at the time my largest cavalry company was on a 15 days' scout in the

Havenna (probably Harcuvar) mountains, 100 miles westward. On the morning of the 26th I started my wagons with 30 days' rations, and company B, 8th cavalry, en route to the Rio Verde. On the 28th, company L returned from its scout, and I at once followed with that command. On the 30th I left Camp Lincoln with the troops, and my pack train of 60 mules, carrying 30 days' rations and crossing Clear Creek six miles from its mouth, ascended the Mogollon mountains (erroneously called the 'High Mesa'). My force consisted of one hundred (100) cavalry, and fifty (50) infantry, and the four guides from the district posts.

"Crossing the divide to the southern crest of the mountains I descended into Tonto basin near the head of the east fork of the Verde, at a point where the mountain rises about 2,500 feet above the basin. The first 500 feet being nearly a perpendicular cliff, I was obliged to cut a zigzag path down the face, after which the breaking of a trail was comparatively easy. The same night my camp was fired into by Indians, killing one horse. At midnight, company L, with a guide, was sent out to look for 'smokes' seen from the mountain. As the column pushed on, detachments were sent out from the front and right flank to scour the country, many rancherias were found, but all had been abandoned—some of them quite lately, others for months.

"On reaching the main fork of Tonto creek, a number of small farms were found, just prepared for planting, ground hoed, etc., but no crops yet in. The Indians had evidently left in

haste fleeing southward. At this point I found that from the appearance of the country and probable obstacles in front, I would not be able to reach the San Carlos, and return with the rations on hand. Before starting I had been assured that the pack animals would carry 250 pounds anywhere the cavalry could go. This I found to be an error as they could not average 200 pounds, and with that could not make over 10 miles a day in a mountain country. In endeavoring to accomplish even that several gave out, others were killed falling over precipices and some of the rations were lost. The work was also telling on my cavalry horses. I therefore selected a camp on the head of Tonto creek, and sending my pack train back to Camp Lincoln for 20 days' rations I occupied the interval in scouting with mounted and dismounted parties the country between Salinas and the Mogollones. On the return of the train, I, for the second time, attempted to push my southward way, but was again repelled by impassable canyons. I finally succeeded in crossing the Salinas at a point where the banks rise nearly to the height of 1,000 feet, and are very steep. Other crossings were afterwards found, and the troops crossed and recrossed the Salinas at four different points between its source and the big Bend, while operating in the basin. During one of the scouts one rancheria was found inhabited, and four Indians were killed while escaping across the river. On another occasion a party exploring a trail to the San Carlos were ambushed but the Indians were repulsed;

two fell but were carried off by their comrades; one soldier and two animals were wounded. The pack train, while on its return for the rations, was ambushed near the top of the 'jump-off' I had constructed down the mountain, and the pack master, Mr. Baker, was killed. The Indians fled before the troops could reach the summit, though they dashed forward with all the speed the steep ascent would admit.

"The section of country north and west of the Salinas having been pretty well scouted, I encamped on one of the east forks of the Salinas, and taking 60 cavalry, all that I had left that were serviceable for a hard march, I pushed on to the San Carlos, which stream I reached after crossing three of its forks. The character of the country here is widely different from that west of the Salinas, the mountains easier of access, and the divides easier crossed. The scenery is very beautiful, land fertile, and river bottoms wide and filled with nutritious grasses, but no signs of recent occupation by Indians, as far as could be seen. A well beaten trail from the southwest, on which the tracks of women and children were very evident, led towards the head of the Little Colorado, or valley of the Prieta, and showed that their families had been moved east, but the shoes of my horses were worn out, and many of the men likewise. I had but rations enough to carry me back at a much faster rate than I had advanced, and from the highest peak not an Indian 'smoke' could be seen. I had with difficulty, and through a country hitherto unknown, and inter-

sected in every direction by impassable canyons, penetrated to the point designated by my orders. I had four of the best guides in the Territory, though none of them had ever been in this section previously (nor could I find or hear of any one who had), but all were excellent mountain men, and brave and expert in following Indian trails, but I could not get a fight. The Indians have (with the exception of a few predatory bands), either left the country west of the San Carlos, or have sent their families beyond, and gone on some grand stealing raid to Sonora.

“The men were eager for a fight, and I was willing, and it had been prophesied that I would meet a thousand warriors before I reached San Carlos; but I can truly say that I can at any time find more fresh Indian signs within 50 miles of this post than I found at 200 miles distant.

“I concluded to return across the mountains and try to explore a road by which I might forward supplies by wagons along the crests of the divide between the waters running to the Colorado, and those running to the Salinas and Gila, thus enabling me to establish temporary depots, from whence I could make descents either into the valley of the Prieta, the Sierra Blancas, or the Little Colorado, with detachments supplied with five to ten days’ rations, and thus obviate the necessity of large pack trains. I succeeded in finding such routes.

“Returning from San Carlos to camp near the Salinas, I ascended the Mogollones, and, following the general course of the divide, reached Camp Lincoln in eight days, from a

point at the head of Salt River. Grass and water in plenty until after crossing the head of east fork. From this point to Clear Creek, water is scarce from May 14th until the summer rains, about July 1. Very little Indian signs were found on the mountain, though the game was far more plentiful than in the valley.

“It may be proper here to refer to the expedition I was organizing to start about May 15 by this very route, and turning the head of the San Carlos, return by the Salinas to Camp Reno. I would thus have taken the Indians from the rear, with perhaps greater success; but military necessity ordained that the movement should be made earlier, and there was too much melting snow on May 1 to allow my animals to travel on the divide, and I had to descend into the basin.

“At the time of the receipt of General Crittenden’s order I had nearly completed a road from Clear creek to the summit of the Mogollones (for wagons). As soon as the summer rains set in I will recommence the work, and continue it to the southern crests, after which the road, though crooked, can be easily worked. My impression is that the most effectual mode of holding the Indians in check, next to fighting them, is to open roads and trails through their country, so that the troops can readily track and follow them. This policy I have followed since my assignment to duty here, and the district has been very quiet.

“Tonto basin is now very well chequered with our trails and officers and men are well acquainted with the country. The basin includes

the district of country south of the high mesa, west and north of the Salinas, and east of the Mazatzal mountains, and has heretofore been properly supposed to be the home of the Apaches, where they had their farms, families and stock. It has probably contained a large population, as we found rancherias sufficient for hundreds of families, but all abandoned.

“Two sets of shoes were prepared for the animals, and three for the infantry; nearly all were worn out before our return, and the feet of a number of the horses had to be encased in leather in order to enable them to return the last 60 miles to Lincoln, the country being covered with broken lava. For 40 days they had not a grain of forage. None of the large herd of cattle stolen by the Indians near Tucson could have been brought into Tonto basin, as at first supposed. Major Clendenin, who skirted the southern edge, could find no trail, and I repeatedly crossed his trail. No stock had passed over my route subsequent to the snow melting with the exception of two horses. The health of the men in general was excellent.

“As soon as a map of the country scouted can be compiled, it will be forwarded, together with journal.

“Very respectfully, your obedient servant,
“THOMAS C. DEVIN,
“Lieutenant Colonel and Brevet Brig. Gen.
Commanding.”

From this report it will be seen that the result of the scout was the establishment of new trails through the Indian country and its mapping, so

that the military thereafter might intelligently locate their camps where water and feed could be obtained.

It will also be seen that, according to the military reports for the years 1866, 1867 and 1868, very little was accomplished in the way of subduing the hostile Apaches. Had Congress authorized the raising of a volunteer regiment in Arizona, such a body of men, under the command of an experienced frontiersman like King Woolsey, Townsend, or Genung, would have done more in one year for the protection of the settlers on the frontier and towards the conquering of the hostile Apaches, than all the soldiers furnished by the Government did up to the time Crook assumed command. Such, at least, was and is, the consensus of opinion among old time residents of this State. As it was, there were more Indians killed by settlers than by the troops.

CHAPTER XIII.

INDIAN TROUBLES.

ATTACK ON T. LAMBERTSON—KILLING OF HENRY TWADDLE—KILLING OF GONZALES—ATTACK ON LE ROY JAY AND WILLIAM TREHAN—FIGHT WITH FRENCHMEN ON HASSAYAMPA—ATTACKS IN AND AROUND WICKENBURG—JACKASS SMITH—EXPEDITION OF LIEUT. CRADLEBAUGH AGAINST INDIANS—JACKSON MCCrackEN'S PLIGHT—KILLING OF GEORGE BOWERS—EXPERIENCE OF "JEFF" DAVIS—ORICK JACKSON DESCRIBES CONDITIONS—THOMAS THOMPSON HUNTER'S DESCRIPTION OF CONDITIONS—HOSTILITIES AT FORT BOWIE—KILLING OF COMMANDER OF POST—MURDER OF COL. STONE AND ESCORT—DUEL BETWEEN KEEPER OF STATION AND ONE OF COCHISE'S BAND—MURDER OF MAIL CARRIER FISHER—ATTACK ON W. A. SMITH AND COMPANIONS—DEPREDACTIONS AROUND TUCSON—CAMP GRANT MASSACRE—MRS. STEPHENS' FIGHT WITH INDIANS—"MINER" EDITORIAL ON SITUATION—W. M. SAXTON KILLED.

The following are some of the outrages committed by the Indians up to and including the year 1868:

In Hamilton's "Resources of Arizona," are given the following:

"T. Lambertson, of Walnut Grove, was one of the first settlers who brought cattle into that valley. He had seven or eight cows and watched

them continually. He was driving them home one evening in 1867, when he was ambushed by the redskins within half a mile of his house. The old man was badly wounded in his side at the first fire and fell to the ground. The Indians rushed upon him from the brush, but Lambertson had a Henry repeating rifle, and as he lay on the ground killed three of them, when the rest retreated and he made his way home with the cows. He never entirely recovered from the effects of the wound, though he lived for several years afterwards.

“Harvey Twaddle, a pioneer prospector, was waylaid on a trail in Walnut Grove and shot in the heart, but drove off the Indians who attacked him. Assistance arriving shortly, he was carried home and lived eight days. A post-mortem examination showed the bullet imbedded in his heart a half an inch from its lower point. This is one of the most extraordinary instances of vitality on record.

“In 1866 a marauding band of Tontos surprised a Mexican named Gonzales between the Agua Fria Valley and Prescott, killed and stripped him, set the body up with the knees, elbows and head resting on the ground, and then shot seventeen arrows into it, and left it in that position.

“In 1867 two well known citizens, Le Roy Jay and William Trehan, while escorting a wagon-load of provisions from Prescott to the Bully Bueno mining camp, fell into an ambush and were killed between Big Bug and Turkey Creek. The driver escaped, the Indians getting away with the provisions and animals. The B. B.

Mining Company, from 1866 to 1869, lost by Indians 240 mules and horses, five of their employees were killed and four badly wounded and their ten stamp quartz mill burned.

"In 1867, two Frenchmen mining in Hassayampa Creek owned two burros and lived in a stone cabin with a log roof covered with earth. One afternoon they observed three Indians on a hill near the creek. Immediately they got the donkeys, took them into the cabin, and shut the heavy plank door. In five minutes there were twenty Indians around the house. At first they tried to break in the door by throwing heavy rocks against it, but as one of the attacking party advanced with a heavy boulder in his hands he was shot through the heart from a crack in the door and fell dead in front of it. That was the only shot the Frenchmen fired. The reds then went behind the house, which was built against a high rocky bank, and tried to break it down by throwing great rocks upon it from the bluff above and kept that game up well into the night, but the roof withstood all assaults. The inmates remained in the house until the middle of the next forenoon, when a mining neighbor named Wallace came along and found the dead Indian at the door. Seeing smoke rising from the chimney, he hailed the inmates and the badly scared Frenchmen opened the door. They stated that they had plenty of provisions and thought they would wait and let the Indians go away.

"Wickenburg was a town on the Hassayampa, built by those who worked quartz from the Vulture mine in 1864 to 1865.

“Many men were killed in those years in that neighborhood, and hundreds of animals stolen. In 1865 there were thirty-three arrastras in the town running on Vulture ore. In the summer, on moonlight nights, many of them were run all night. Bigelow & Smith were running three arrastras day and night, having six animals. One night in June, as Smith (known as ‘Oregon Smith’) was on duty, he saw a suspicious object moving in the tall grass near the arrastra. He aroused his partner, saying: ‘The Indians are here.’ Both went out, Smith with a rifle, Bigelow with a shotgun. Smith said: ‘Lay low, Big, and you’ll see the cuss raise up his head above the grass out there,’ pointing where he had seen him. In less than two minutes a head raised, and Smith fired. A groan followed, and all was still. Smith reloaded and both cautiously approached the supposed dead Indian, and found a young donkey lying dead in the brush; it was shot in the throat and its neck broken. The slayer, after that, was known as ‘Jackass Smith.’

“In 1867 or 1868, Lieut. Cradlebaugh was sent out from Camp Verde with a detachment of men to the Black Hills, for the purpose of having a talk with a band of Indians who signified a willingness to make peace and come into the post. He camped the first night in a small flat below a high ledge of rocks, the horses being fastened to a picket rope in front of the camp. Towards morning the slumbering troopers were awakened by the most unearthly yells and showers of arrows and bullets. Every horse at the picket line was soon shot down. The troops

huddled closely under the rocky cliff. One man was killed, and several wounded, including a doctor, who had his arm broken and afterwards amputated at the post. Jackson McCracken, afterwards the discoverer of the famous mine which bears his name, was with the party. When the attack began, he was sound asleep with his head against a small pine tree about eight inches in diameter. He was in full range of the fire, and when the leaden hail became fast and furious he hugged the protection of that small tree with praiseworthy pertinacity. Being a large, fat man, the little sapling was insufficient to cover his whole body, and years afterwards, in telling the story, he used to say that as he heard the arrows whiz by and the bullets strike the tree near his head he thought he would give all of Arizona to have that tree six inches larger.

“In 1868 George Bowers, one of the brightest young men of Prescott, was killed on the road coming from Camp Verde to Prescott. In 1869, a party of thirteen prospectors outfitted in Santa Fe, New Mexico, and came into the eastern portion of Arizona looking for placer diggings. They were successful in finding gold, but the Indians attacked them while at work, killed four or five of the party and got possession of their camp, provisions and animals. The remainder made their way across the mountains to the Verde settlements, and coming down Clear Creek approached the camp of a detachment of soldiers who took them for Indians, and fired more than fifty shots at them before the ragged,

half-starved wretches could convince them of their mistake.

"C. Davis, better known as 'Jeff' Davis, of Yavapai County, had a lively experience in those days. He lived on a lonely ranch near the head of the Hassayampa, and was engaged in farming and stock raising. The latter pursuit, however, was not a success, for whenever he had accumulated a few head of stock the Indians were sure to steal them. 'Jeff' was a great hunter, and on one of his expeditions he came upon a band of Indians in the heavy pine timber. Stepping behind a tree he waited until the foremost savage got within range when his trusty rifle rang out and the Indian fell to rise no more. The astonished redskins looked around to see from whence the attack came, and ere they could recover themselves two more bit the dust. The remainder fled panic stricken, while 'Jeff' pumped the lead after them while one remained in sight."

Orick Jackson in his "White Conquest," says:

"During the carnival of blood that extended from 1863 to 1873, over 600 white men were killed by the Indians in that zone lying north of the Gila and Salt Rivers. These fatalities were confined principally to 'picking off' travelers in parties of from two to five. Organized bodies were very seldom molested, excepting of course the military operations in a general fight. Many ranchers fell in the field while at work or in going from home to a neighbor. Invariably the white victim was scalped and horribly mutilated otherwise."

The following from the pen of Thomas Thompson Hunter, an old timer, shows the attitude of the Indians at this time:

“In the fall of 1867 I entered the Territory of Arizona with a herd of cattle gathered in Central Texas and driven across the plains, seeking a market at the Government Posts, the only beef supply available at the time for the different army posts. The trip was a dreary one from the start, accompanied with dangers and hardships innumerable. Every inch of the distance across was menaced with hostile Indians, who never lost an opportunity to attack our outfit. For weeks at a time we subsisted solely upon our herd, for beef straight was our only ration. Apache Pass was the first place reached in Arizona of any note. A small company of U. S. Infantry occupied the military post there, known as Fort Bowie. On the day of our arrival at Bowie, it looked pretty gloomy and lonesome for the few soldiers stationed there. The Indians were hooting and guying the soldiers from the cliffs and boulders on the mountain sides. They spoke mostly in Spanish, but several of their number could make themselves understood in our native tongue (English).

“A few days before our arrival at Fort Bowie happened a sad incident that impressed me very much. The Commander, a captain of the Post, could not believe that there existed such a thing as a hostile Indian. He had never been close to one. An alarm was given by some of the herders that they had been attacked by Indians. The captain indiscreetly mounted his

horse, with only one assistant, and galloped off to where the Indians were last seen. The wily Apaches concealed themselves, and when the captain approached near enough, instead of shooting him as they generally did, they roped him, jerked him off his horse, and dragged him to death. On the day of our arrival, one of the Indians rode up on the captain's horse, and charged around, yelling and hooting and defying the soldiers. I could relate other just such performances by the reds.

"It was near Bowie a few years later that Col. Stone and his escort were murdered by Apaches. Old Fort Bowie, now abandoned, is a dreary, lonesome place, yet the Indian war is over, but it gives one the shivers to go through that pass and recall the horrible deeds that have been committed thereabouts. While there in 1867 I looked at the little old stone cabin built by Butterfield's men, and while I am relating dark tales of old Apache Pass, I'll just relate an incident that I never heard of in print. A friend of mine was stationed there about the time that Butterfield's lines were drawn off. A fine looking young man, known to the employees as 'John,' I think an Ohio boy, was the keeper of the station. The stages brought in what little grain was used by the stage company's horses from the Pima villages. At this time old Cochise's band was friendly with the whites, and at the time would camp in and around the station. On one occasion, John, the keeper, discovered one of the Cochise men stealing corn out of a little hole in one of the sacks. John, acting upon the impulse of the moment,

kicked the Indian out of the cabin. In a little while afterward, the old chief Cochise came and made a bitter complaint to John about his abusing one of his best warriors—that it was the act of a coward, and he demanded that John fight his warrior like a brave man, that he could not tolerate such an insult to one of his best men, whereupon Cochise staked off the distance. His man toed the mark, with an old Colt cap and ball six-shooter. John, the boy keeper of the station, accepted the challenge readily, and took his station in the door of the cabin facing his antagonist, with a duplicate of the same arm that the warrior had. He looked the true specimen of frontier manhood that he was, with two white men his only backers, while the Indian had his able chief with his tribe to back him. The critical moment had arrived. John, the Ohio boy, represented the white race of America, while the Indian represented the Indian world. Would John weaken? Could John face such an ordeal? The great chief stood for fair play, and he gave the signal by dropping something from his own hand. The two fired nearly together. John's dark, curly locks touched the wooden lintel over his head. The Indian's ball was a line shot, but too high by about half an inch. John's ball centered the Indian's heart, and he fell dead in his tracks. The old chief stepped forward and grasped John's hand, and told him that he was a brave man. This closed that particular incident, and the white boys and the Chiricahua Indians remained good friends until the stage line was taken off—an act of the Civil War. About this time there were many

terrible crimes committed. Arizona was certainly a bloody battle field.

“As we entered the Territory north of Stein’s Pass, we crossed through Doubtful Canyon in the night time. At the divide where we turn down on the slope of the San Simon, we ran upon a gruesome scene. A number of dead men were scattered around. We passed along as rapidly as we could in order to reach the plains before daylight. At the very time that we were passing through Doubtful Canyon, the signal fires were burning on the mountain side (Apaches), telling each other of our movements. We passed on to Fort Bowie as fast as we could. In going up the mountain side entering Apache Pass, we saw where a battle royal had been fought. Just before we got there, the party who had contracted to deliver the U. S. mails was at the time very hard pressed. It was so discouraging, so many riders had been killed and stock lost, that the contractor would hire men for the trip to carry the mails from Bowie to Las Cruces and return. One hundred and fifty dollars would be paid for the trip. The boy who made this fight, whose name was Fisher, had agreed to make the trip to Las Cruces. He left Bowie one afternoon mounted upon an old condemned government mule, armed with two 45 six shooters. When about half way down the slope toward San Simon flats, the enemy attacked him, and if he had had a decent mount, I believe to this day that he would have won out. They forced him to zigzag along the side of the mountain, their numbers driving him to the hills, and preventing him from getting them in

the open. All along his trail were dead ponies that Fisher had shot. We never knew how many Indians he got, as they removed their dead. Not a thing did I know about this boy except that his name was Fisher. After exhausting his ammunition, they finished him up, after a fight against fearful odds, the equal of which never came off in any other fight by a single lone boy in all of Arizona's Indian wars. Fisher was one of God's own boys, and the splendid leather in his makeup was duly respected by the Apache nation. The record left on his mutilated body was evidence sufficient that he died game,—his heart was taken out and probably eaten,—a custom of the Indians practiced in those days by them, a belief that it would make them brave like their victims. His stirrup foot (the left) was skinned,—a mark of honor and respect to a fallen brave enemy, as also his right hand, the bridle hand. The Indians honored the brave boy in his death, and nature did the rest by erecting the grand old brown mountains for his monument, which will last through Eternity.

“We leave Apache Pass now and travel on toward Tucson, the next place of any note, except that I might mention Pantano, the historic place where W. A. Smith made one of the best fights on record. He and three companions were attacked early one morning by the Indians. He was the only one of the four men left to tell the tale. Is there any one person to-day in all of Arizona who can possibly realize or appreciate the position of this man, fighting for his

life with his three dead comrades piled around him, he with his big old shotgun carrying death and destruction at every discharge of the terrible old weapon—justly earning for himself the name of ‘Shotgun Smith.’ Afterwards, the Indians in relating the battle, said that the man who handled the shotgun killed or wounded seven or eight of their number. Old ‘Shotgun Smith’ is an old man now, and lives at the Soldiers’ Home at Santa Monica, California, a personal friend of thirty years’ standing—a friendship that has grown with the years. Many other horrible deeds were committed in and around Pantano, but I got through O. K., and arrived in Tucson in time to take my Christmas dinner in 1867, which I might state consisted of a can of jelly and a piece or two of Mexican sugar panoche. This was a luxury for cow boys after our drive, and a fare of principally beef broiled upon a stick, and oftentimes not even that much. Oh, how I did love the old city then, a place of rest, a place of refuge. I could spread my blankets on the ground and sleep so good, with my system relaxed—no horrible dreams, no nightmare. For once I was happy and contented, and had not a single desire to move on and hunt something better. At that early date I felt that Arizona was good enough for me. Already I loved her grand old brown mountains. I felt at home in the strange unknown land of my adoption. Tucson was peculiarly afflicted with Apache depredations at this time. The government at Washington could never hear the cries of distress from the pioneers—people who were struggling against

such fearful odds to maintain themselves. Our petitions and prayers were ignored, and at times of unusual activity on the part of the enemy, we felt like giving up the unequal contest. The policy of the Government at this time was certainly contemptible. Under the guns at Fort Grant, with the strong arm of the Government protecting a gang of Apache cutthroats, and issuing rations to them, maintaining their families, in order that the bucks could more easily raid Tucson, murder her citizens and steal the stock, and maintain a reign of terror for unfortunate old Tucson. There must be a beginning and an ending of all things, and, like the old Kentuckian who, summing up the political situation, said, 'when politics got bad it's mighty hard to mend them, but when they got d——d bad, they just tear loose and mend themselves,' the Apache situation had reached this point, and something was going to happen. Only one of those old pioneers of Tucson who faced that crisis and made himself an outlaw in order to save his country, is alive, old and feeble Sidney R. DeLong. (Since deceased.) W. S. Oury and his friends were the leaders in leading a band of Papago Indians to old Fort Grant, surprising the Government renegades, and exterminating the whole outfit. Tucson enjoyed a rest after this, but the Federal Grand Jury afterwards arraigned Sidney R. DeLong and one hundred others, but the only thing that did happen was that the Government ordered General Crook to Arizona, and my old friend DeLong's action was the beginning of the end of the terrible Apache war.

The war continued for years, many crimes were committed, many pioneers were murdered after this, but DeLong's action forced the Washington authorities to listen to our prayer and petitions for the first time. The war is now over, peace reigns supreme. Let us cover the past with the mantle of charity, forget the past in so far as we can, and when the true history of Arizona is written, may it remind the future generation of its obligation to the old pioneer Sidney R. DeLong, who is spending the evening of his useful life in the old historic town of Tucson that he loved so well.

“As we take the western trail from Tucson, we pass on to the Gila River, and enter the Pima and Maricopa Indian country. These Indians were found in a pitiful condition, poverty stricken in the extreme. They made their boast to us that they had never taken white blood. It was very easy to see why this was the case. They were being hard pressed by the Yumas, Apaches and other Indians. They were compelled to accept the whites as allies, otherwise they would have been exterminated root and branch in a few years more. We felt safe among them from the hostiles. The greatest trouble was their stealing propensities, which were thoroughly developed. Our stock was getting so poor and worried with travel that we camped some days in this section. Quite a number of immigrants fell in with us for protection from the Apaches, and while here at Maricopa a few pioneers came over from Salt River to tell us about the wonderful country over there, and induce the immigrants to settle with them.

They also held out the inducement to us that there was plenty of grass there also, and that it would be a fine place for our cattle."

The "Miner" of September 21st, 1867, says:

"News was brought to town last evening from the Point of Rocks, about four miles from Prescott and three miles from Fort Whipple, that about 20 Indians had made an attack upon Honorable Lewis A. Stephens' home with the evident intention of murdering the inmates and stealing the stock. At the time of the attack there were on the place but two persons, Mrs. Stephens and a hired man. The house is situated about a hundred yards from an immense pile of rocks, which contains numerous caves and little valleys. As luck would have it, Mrs. Stephens and the man saw the murderous villains as they emerged from the rocks, and ran for their guns, opening fire upon the thieves, who returned the fire for some time, trying at every turn to get possession of the horses, but the quick eyes and steady fire of Mrs. Stephens and the hired man, cowed the savages and they were forced to skulk back to their hiding places without accomplishing the object of their raid. Many a man placed in the same position as Mrs. Stephens would have taken to his heels and ran for dear life, but she stood her ground and fought them like the heroine that she is. Shortly after the Indians left, Mr. Johns, who lives on a neighboring ranch and heard the firing, started with some men for Stephens' and followed the Indians into the rocks, but failed to find them. He then started to town bringing the news, and a request from Mrs. Stephens to her husband, who is a

member of the legislature, to send her some buck shot, 'A little more shot, Mr. Stephens.' Bully for Mrs. Stephens; she is our favorite candidate for the 'Commander of the District of Arizona.'

In the Fish manuscript another version of this story is given. In this version it is stated that Mrs. Stephens' message to her husband was as follows:

"Lewis, the Indians are here; send me plenty of powder and lead. Don't neglect your duties by coming home, for I am master of the situation and can hold the house."

The following is from the "Miner" of Oct. 3, 1867:

"Troops on the Colorado, with Col. Price, take warpath against Wallapais." Also,

"The Legislature petitions Maj. W. R. Price to sustain a company of cavalry at the Vegas Ranch for the protection of the road and the settlements in Pah-Ute County."

The "Miner" of Sept. 30, 1867, copies from the "San Francisco Call" the following editorial, which shows the feeling in the West against the hostile Indians:

"Indian raids still continue."

"Everything connected with the Indian business of the country seems to be a failure, except massacres by Indians. They flourish 'like a green bay tree' and fill the land with their butcheries. The shrieks of unfortunate women and children while being tomahawked, scalped or disemboweled on the plains, nightly rend the air; yet nothing is done to put an end to the out-

rages. Sherman, who 'rode from Atlanta to the sea,' has proved a big failure as an Indian fighter. Several months ago he made a trip through the borders of the Indian country, and positively announced that there was no danger to be apprehended from the Indians; that all the stories of Indian outrages are false; that there was no cause to fear anything from the Indians; and that, in effect, but few troops were needed to protect the routes of travel, etc. Government, and the people not threatened by Indians, listened to Sherman's oracular sayings, and acted accordingly. The result is before us. Not only are white travelers and settlers being mercilessly slaughtered and their dead bodies shockingly outraged every day, but the Indians have stopped telegraphic communications almost entirely, intercepted the mails and captured railroad trains; they have also endangered the very existence of General Sherman's troops. It cannot be denied that Sherman's management of Indian affairs has resulted in the greatest failure of the day. His pompous assertions at the outset have been falsified by events, and the Indians have constantly grown in strength in spite of him. These things happened partly because he was too wise in his own conceit, and, therefore, above listening to those who knew more of Indian fighting than he did, and partly because he has persisted in fighting the Indians on moral suasion principles, rather than according to the only system they can comprehend, that of destructive force. He has shown himself to be more of a missionary than a soldier in the last Indian campaign, and has con-

sequently, relied for success more upon talking than fighting. The amount of it is Government made a mistake in allotting Sherman to the Western District. Sheridan should have been there and Sherman in Louisiana. The former knows how to fight Indians, while Sherman does not. But even Sherman's failures in Indian fighting do not do away with the fact that our whole Indian policy is wrong. We could cease to bestow Indian annuities, to make presents; to recognize Indian nations and tribes. We should give the Indians to understand that they should respect life and property everywhere, or else suffer the most serious consequences. A war of extermination against the Indians would be better for all, than the merciless and continuous butcheries that have been going on."

The "Miner" of Sept. 11, 1867, says:

"W. M. Saxton, Cummings and Manning, were attacked by Indians at Round Valley. Saxton killed, Cummings and Manning wounded. Indians defeated."

CHAPTER XIV.

INDIAN TROUBLES (Continued).

INDIAN QUESTION NOT SOLVED—GENERAL MASON SUCCEEDED BY COLONEL WALLEN AND COLONEL LOVELL—GENERAL GREGG AND GENERAL CRITTENDEN SUCCEED COLONELS WALLEN AND LOVELL—ARIZONA DECLARED MILITARY DISTRICT BY GENERAL HALLECK—GENERAL McDOWELL MAKES VISIT TO ARIZONA—RAIDS AND MASSACRES CONTINUE—EXPEDITION BY GENERAL GREGG—ATTACK ON MILLER'S RANCH—BRAVERY OF MRS. MILLER—A. M. ERWIN, MEMBER OF LEGISLATURE, KILLED BY INDIANS—GENERAL ORD SUCCEEDS GENERAL McDOWELL—CHARLES SPENCER AND PARTY ATTACKED BY INDIANS—EXPEDITION BY GENERAL ALEXANDER—LA PAZ THREATENED BY INDIANS—ATTACK UPON JOSEPH MELVIN AND J. P. GIBSON—JOSIAH WHITCOMB AND PARTY ATTACKED BY INDIANS—GEORGE D. BOWERS AND PARTY ATTACKED, BOWERS KILLED—BEGOLE AND THOMPSON ATTACKED, THOMPSON KILLED—FIGHT AT BURNT RANCH—JAKE MILLER KILLS INDIAN CHIEF AND SAVES RANCH AND STOCK—E. A. BENTLEY, EDITOR AND PROPRIETOR OF "MINER" KILLED BY INDIANS—MURDERS AND RAIDS IN SOUTHERN PART OF ARIZONA DETAILED BY CHARLES A. SHIBELL—SOL BARTH'S EXPERIENCE WITH COCHISE.

From the Fish Manuscript:

"The Indian question in Arizona had not been solved and many plans to arrange the small

military forces were proposed so that they would accomplish the best results. In 1866 Arizona was divided into what was called the north and south districts, and Mason's successors were Colonel H. D. Wallen in the north, and Colonel Charles S. Lovell in the south. These two did not hold their positions very long, nor does it appear that they did much. They were succeeded by General J. I. Gregg in the north and General T. L. Crittenden in the south, early in 1867. General Crittenden came from California with three hundred men and arrived on the lower Gila early in the year. He had a difficult time in getting through, encountering some very bad sand storms as well as unfavorable weather.

“Regular troops had been sent in to take the place of the volunteers and now numbered from fifteen hundred to two thousand, and were soon increased. In October, Arizona was formally declared a military district by order of General Halleck. In December, General McDowell made a visit to this part of his department which did not result in much good. He was not well liked by the people of Arizona, and while he was acknowledged as a gentleman, he was wholly incapable of comprehending the nature and requirements of Indian warfare. As a cabinet officer he may have had few equals in the service; but for Indian campaigning it would have been difficult to select another so poorly qualified.

“Raids and massacres still continued, and there was some agitation in the south during the winter of 1866-67, in consequence of the Im-

perialists leaving Mexico and going to California by way of Yuma. When Maximilian first came there was an exodus of the liberals, but now Juarez had triumphed and the Imperialists emigrated in large numbers. These agitations on the border were continually occurring, and the Indians never slackened their vigilance, and thefts and attacks upon the emigrants were constant. During this winter a party came into southern Arizona, camping one night at a station on the lower Gila. They secured their animals by putting them in an adobe corral, and then lay down at the entrance for the night. The Apaches got to the back of the corral and with strips of rawhide sawed out a section of the wall, and when the Americans arose in the morning, they found themselves left afoot.

“In April, 1867, the Apaches made an attack on a ranch three miles east of Prescott and drove off several head of cattle. A detachment of troops was at once sent out from Fort Whipple, and though they marched seventy-five miles in twenty-four hours, they failed to come up with the redskins. The officer in command reported that the hostiles were strong in numbers, and had fled in the direction of Hell’s Canyon. General Gregg, then commanding the northern district, immediately started with two fresh companies of cavalry, himself at the head, and made a forced march by night, in order to surprise the enemy. Next morning at daybreak he was at Hell’s Canyon, but no Apaches were to be found there nor any trace of them. After scouring the country down the Verde, he returned to Fort Whipple. However, a day or

two afterwards a detachment of cavalry succeeded in finding and surprising a rancheria of Apaches to the southwest of the Verde, and killing five and wounding twice as many more at the first fire. The rest fled but soon rallied and came on in such numbers that the troops were compelled to fall back to the main column. It was then thought best to retire to Fort Whipple as their rations were about exhausted. Subsequently Gregg sent them out again, and this time they succeeded in damaging the Apaches considerably.

“The main roads and trails from Prescott to Antelope, Rich Hill, Date Creek, Wickenburg, and Ehrenberg, on the Colorado river, went through Skull Valley, and at least fifty white men were killed on them during the war times. A small detachment of soldiers was stationed at the lower end of the Valley in 1866 to escort the United States mail, and to protect the settlers along the roads. Lieutenant Hutton was in command of this force which was made up of Mexican volunteers.

“In 1867 S. C. Miller’s ranch at the edge of Prescott was attacked by Indians, who commenced to drive off the stock. Miller was not at home but Mrs. Miller, who was alone, took her husband’s gun and opened fire on them. Miller, who was on his way from town, heard the firing, and soon came to the rescue, but it was through Mrs. Miller’s pluck that the stock was saved.

“The year 1868 does not record as many murders as usual, but among them were those of A. M. Erwin, a member of the Legislature, who

was killed by Indians, and George Bowers, one of the brightest young men in Prescott, while on the road coming from Camp Verde to Prescott."

Notwithstanding the statement made by Mr. Fish in the paragraph just above quoted, the following items taken from the files of the Arizona "Miner" for the year 1868, speak for themselves:

"February 29th, 1868.

"Band of Indians stole horses and mules near Wickenburg. A band of twenty-four men was organized at Wickenburg and followed them into Tonto Basin. It was charged that the Indians were some of those who have been fed all winter at Camp Reno by the Government, who stole the animals. It goes on to say that the tracks of all animals stolen from this section of the country have been seen going in that direction. If this be the case, and from our knowledge of the Indians and their country, we believe it is so, we are sorry that the officers in command of the troops en route to Reno do not keep their friendlies at home. The Mexicans, Pimas and Maricopas say that the Apache cares nothing for treaties, and they look upon a treaty with an Apache as a farce, and claim they are friendly with the military at some government post in their country, where they can draw rations from the commissary, and upon them travel to settlements, steal and kill, and hurry back with their booty. We do not blame the officers at McDowell and Reno for trading with

the Indians, as we suppose they are carrying out instructions from their superiors."

In the same paper appears the following:

"General Ord, who succeeds General McDowell, declares that they may talk of Peace Commissioners, but the only way to make peace with the Apaches is to kill them off, the sooner the better."

Under date of April 4, 1868, the "Miner" says:

"Hualapais attack a mail party, kill the escort, wound one rider and capture the mail, within three miles of a camp of U. S. Volunteers. They brutally mutilated the lifeless bodies of their victims, cut off their limbs, etc. Under this heading is given this description of the fight:

"Camp Willow Grove, Arizona,

"March 23, 1868.

"I am extremely sorry to have to inform you that Mr. Charles Spencer has been severely wounded by Indians, but I am happy to state, not mortally. He is now in the hospital at this post and is doing as well as could be expected.

"He and the escorts started from this post with the mail for Hardyville and Grant, on the morning of the 21st inst., at the usual time, nine o'clock. Before they got into the cotton-woods four miles from here, they were fired upon by a party of Hualapai Indians, and the escorts, consisting of Corporal Troy and Private Flood, were killed at the first fire, as was also the mule which the mail carrier was riding. Spencer, as

quickly as possible, disengaged himself from the saddle, grabbed his seven shooting rifle, and ran behind a green wood birch, which was the only shelter close at hand. Soon after getting behind this cover he saw a party of savages go up to the dead body of the corporal, strip and mutilate it. While they were engaged in this bloody work Spencer kept up a steady fire upon them, and had the satisfaction of killing two of the red devils. The others then ran for shelter. Spencer did the same, and, on reaching a safe retreat, and just as he was about to get securely covered, he was fired upon by about a dozen Indians who were hidden behind some rocks. One of the shots hit him in the thigh, passing through the fleshy part, causing him to fall. They then rushed towards him, thinking they had him sure. In this they were mistaken, for Charley had not yet commenced to fight. He soon gathered himself up and made the savages hunt their holes. He then crawled into a cave between some rocks, and took a rest, which he needed. During all this time a party of the Indians were stripping the bodies of the murdered soldiers and cutting up the carcasses of the horses and mules, which occupied them for about twenty minutes. They then surrounded Spencer and tried to shoot him out, but he could shoot and they found that that was no good. Then they tried to scare him out with yells, but he yelled back defiance at them and, whenever an opportunity offered, sent a bullet after them. Changing their tactics, they tried to flatter him by telling him to go home; that they did not want to kill him. About 4 P. M. they got up

and left the place. The cause of their leaving was the appearance of a squad of soldiers sent out to learn the cause of the firing which had been heard at camp. The men came upon the dead bodies of the corporal and the escorts. Hastening to camp they reported, and a wagon and twenty men were sent out under Lieutenant Robinson to bring in the bodies. Spencer heard the rumble of the wagon, but being unable to go to it on account of his wounds, he yelled and discharged his pistol, by which means he attracted the attention of the lieutenant to his situation. He was immediately placed in the wagon and brought to camp here. All the care and attention necessary was and will be rendered him by the officers and men. He says there were all of seventy-five Indians, one-half of whom were armed with guns. The officers were censured for not sending troops to the scene of action sooner as the reports of the firing were heard at the military camp several hours before they moved."

Under date of June 6th, 1868, the "Miner" had the following:

"Camp O'Connell.

"On the 3d of March General Alexander and Major Clendenin arrived at Camp O'Connell with their force which numbered about 170 men, and had a talk with the Indians, some two hundred in number, under two chiefs, Delchayha and Skivitkill. The former is the miraculous gentleman I have spoken of before. The latter the War Raven Chief, and a Pinal. The general wished them to remain in camp until

he returned, and if they wished to give him a dozen men as scouts or guides, all well; if not, to remain in camp and they would be safe; but any caught outside would be shot. To this they agreed and sung all night. Next morning they received a beef, and as soon as the cavalry made its appearance over the hill coming into camp, Skivitkill and his tribe took to their heels and made for the mountains. The other chief took it coolly and remained, but during the forenoon most of his men left, and about noon he departed in peace. At two o'clock the command was under way, and camped in Tonto Creek the night of the 3rd. The next morning they proceeded direct for the mountains of the east. As we reached the canyon, on the left was a small hill on which the Indians were standing, almost over the trail. The guide being ahead, the Indians motioned him to come up, which he did, and found Delchayha was there. They immediately lit cigars, and were joined by the Apache interpreter, the Spanish interpreter being about half way up the hill. When the general at the head of the command arrived, he wished to know of the chief what he wanted. The chief was not alone, an Indian orderly standing about twenty paces in the rear, the remainder being behind rocks. The chief stood upon a rock that projected over a hill, with his gun in his hand and having on a blouse, shoulder straps and a black hat. He said he had come there to meet the Capitania to declare war against the Americans as he had made up his mind to that since the night before. He re-

quired blood and wanted the general to leave his country. He said that the Capitan Little, meaning Lieutenant Dubois, was a good man, but the Capitancias Grandes were bad, and he would not hear of peace with them. Skivitkill, with a thousand of his warriors was coming to attack our camp, and we would be wiped out of the country in no time. All this was accompanied by formidable gestures, and at last the 'Gentleman' broke into the most abusive language. The general called to the guide and the interpreter to come down, and told some of the men to shoot the chief up. The words were not finished when about half a dozen bullets greeted the chief, leaving nothing to be seen of him but his breechclout, the Apache national flag, floating for an instant, and then disappearing. The infantry and cavalry ascended the hill immediately, but the Indians were nowhere to be found; nothing but a tin pail remained. The general, not wishing to lose time, moved on, and when the rear guard was passing, the Indians came to the front but without injury to either party. The march was continued to Red Rock Canyon, where we camped for the night, and started the next morning for Meadow Valley, and arrived there about three o'clock Sunday, the 5th, and saw no Indians.

"Monday evening we started back again, but the general, Major Clendenin, and the cavalry, started southeast in the direction of Fort Grant. As the infantry climbed the hill, a sergeant of Company L, 8th Cavalry, who was some distance in the rear, leading his horse which had given out, a shot was fired from the woods, hitting

the horse in the flank with a charge of buck shot. The sergeant and the Indians had it pretty warm for about fifteen minutes, when a squad of the rear guard went back, dislodged the Apaches, and brought off the horse, which was shot soon after. On arriving at the top of the hill and looking in the direction that the cavalry was taking, the country was covered with slopes as far as the eye could reach. From Meadow Valley the infantry marched in two days to this camp, losing a number on the road. I forgot to say that after firing on the chief, the general immediately dispatched a corporal and six men into camp, with orders to capture all the Indians in and around there. Some half dozen were still around, but were soon put in confinement. The next night one buck bolted, was fired on and missed, and on reaching the hill over the camp, made quite a speech, cursing all Americans. The day after, four Indians came in under a flag of truce from Skivitkill, saying as well as could be understood, that the chief was scared on seeing so many Americans and ran away, but did not intend to be hostile, and, seeing that the general meant him no harm, he wished to come in right away. These four were confined also. Two Apache-Mohaves came in a day after the scout left, but were hunted out. The most of the Apache-Mohaves have soldiers' clothes on, and may be from the reservation. The other Indians say they are great thieves. In a few days a scout will leave for Green Valley, which is to be Camp Reno instead of the first place located. This valley is ten miles from Meadow Valley west, and a little north of it.

A splendid place for a post and to hunt Indians. With another post between this and Grant, with plenty of cavalry, the Apache will be kept hopping. Let the posts be planted in the homes of the reptiles at any expense, roads made there, and it is the end of the hostile Apache in Arizona. Hunting them, we can follow them and accomplish nothing. Infantry they laugh at, but cavalry and Pimas they dread, the latter the most. For anything but garrison duties and road making, the infantry is useless."

Also, under date of October 10th, 1868, the "Miner" says:

"La Paz threatened by Indians. The citizens and seventy or eighty Chimehuevi Indians prepared to defend the place against the combined hostile force of Apache-Yumas, Apache-Mohaves and Yavapais. Forty families are removed to Ravena's large store. Pickets were placed outside the town, and the Chimehuevis were actively scouting the country and advising their white friends of the movements of the hostile savages."

NOTE: These Indians were supposed to have been on the Colorado Reservation in charge of Mr. George W. Dent, Indian Agent.

On October 31st, 1868, in an editorial, the "Miner" gives the following in reference to hostile Indians and attacks upon settlements:

"The first attack was made upon Mr. Joseph Melvin and Mr. J. P. Gibson while they were going from the Agua Fria to the Verde, the particulars of which are as follows:

"While riding along the road near Ash Creek they were waylaid and fired upon by a large

band of Indians, when Mr. Gibson received four bullets in his arm, and two in his right breast. The bullet passed through Mr. Melvin's boot leg, and he having so miraculously escaped unhurt, held his friend Gibson on the saddle while they retreated toward the Agua Fria, pursued by the murderers. When shot at, Gibson tried to take his shot gun out of the gun leather on the pommel of his saddle, but a rope by which he was leading a pack mule was fastened to the pommel, and in order to facilitate matters he pulled his knife and cut the rope, when, unfortunately, the gun dropped to the ground, and both it and the mule fell into the hands of the Indians.

"Upon reaching Willow Springs, Gibson, from loss of blood became too faint to ride further, and Melvin was forced to leave him and ride to the ranches for assistance. He procured a wagon and hauled the wounded man to his home.

"Sunday night Messrs. Brainard, Lount and others started from town for Gibson's ranch, and brought him to Fort Whipple hospital where he now lies. This is the second time within the past two years that Gibson has been attacked by Indians.

"Sunday last, about four o'clock in the afternoon, Josiah Whitcomb, William King, and Boblett were coming to Prescott from their ranches at the Toll Gate, and when near the Burnt Ranch about four miles from Prescott, fire was opened upon them from both sides of the road. Whitcomb was shot dead and King, while in the act of firing at the savages received

a severe bullet wound in the left leg. Boblett, who rode on the seat alongside of Whitcomb, escaped without a scratch. A discharged soldier who rode behind the wagon also escaped. Upon being shot, Whitcomb, who was driving, dropped the reins, and would have fallen out of the wagon had not Boblett taken hold of him. Boblett then got hold of the reins and drove out of the trap as fast as possible. When the attack was made upon the party, a large body of recruits were coming on behind them close enough to hear the firing, but not near enough to render assistance. Mr. Lee, of the American ranch, informed us that the ground in the vicinity of the place where the attack was made was literally covered with arrows. Mr. Lee was with the volunteers coming into Prescott.

“Mr. Whitcomb was buried in this place on Monday, resting in the Masonic burial ground. He leaves a wife and three small children, and an aged father and mother, all of whom reside in this vicinity.

“The next day, Monday, about ten o'clock, another party of Indians attacked a party of five men, composed of Mr. George D. Bowers, Joseph C. Lennon, and three soldiers, as they were coming from Camp Lincoln to Prescott. The attack was made upon this party at a point about one mile east of the Cienega. At the time of the attack Bowers was in the lead, followed by a soldier; next came Lennon, who was followed by two soldiers. The first intimation the party had of danger was the seeing of a blazing fire issuing from the mouths of about thirty guns which the Indians had leveled upon

them from both sides of the road, accompanied by showers of arrows and deafening savage yells. Poor brave George Bowers was shot in the abdomen and the soldier who rode behind him was shot from his mule and wounded in six places. Lennon and the two soldiers who rode behind him escaped. After managing to get the wounded soldier upon an animal, the party retreated, Lennon holding Bowers in the saddle, and the two soldiers doing the same with their wounded comrade. They were followed for about a mile and a half by about sixty yelling, fiendish red skins. They were met by Lieutenant Derby and about twenty men, who were coming to Fort Whipple with some wagons. They put the wounded man in a wagon, and returned to Camp Lincoln.

“Wednesday night Augustus Begole and B. F. Thompson were attacked three-quarters of a mile from Prescott by a large band of Indians who were hidden in the rocks. Thompson was killed by the savages, and Begole was wounded severely in the shoulder. After firing all the shots out of his revolver, Begole ran to the house, got his rifle, and prevented the savages from taking the team.”

Probably the most desperate attack which was made by the Indians during this period was that which is now known as the fight at the Burnt Ranch. Judge E. W. Wells, of Prescott, gives the following account of this fight:

“This occurred in 1865 at a small camp northeast of Prescott, established by Jake Miller, father of Sam Miller, now residing near Prescott, and the last surviving member of the

famous Walker Party. Miller was an old man who had pioneered and fought Indians from the Ohio river westward. With one companion he had built a small log cabin northeast of Prescott, and was engaged in making shakes out of the pine timber abundant in the section, shakes at that time being in great demand in Prescott.

“The little cabin was in one of the best grassed sections of the country, and this fact led E. W. Wells, who owned a small band of cattle, to arrange with Mr. Miller to care for them, keeping more or less herd of them by day, and corralling them in a pen of logs at night. This corral was perhaps five hundred feet long, and the gate to it joined the cabin, so that the cattle could not be taken out unobserved. Mr. Miller and his friend were both armed with muzzle loading rifles, and well supplied with ammunition. One afternoon Mr. Miller went to drive up the cattle feeding in the valley just below him, it being his custom to bring them in early, thereby avoiding the danger of an evening brush with prowling Indians. At this time the Apache-Mohaves, or Date Creek Indians were very troublesome, and miners were killed and stock stolen almost within the limits of the town. As Mr. Miller neared the cattle and began to round them up, he noticed a raven flit from one clump of oak brush near him to another. A second and a third raven followed—flitting from point to point—till an incautious movement revealed the head of an Indian instead of a bird. Mr. Miller had his gun, but he continued rounding up the cattle, and hurried

them toward the corral. When the Indians saw they were discovered, they sprang out in open pursuit, but, being armed only with bows and arrows, feared to close in at once. Hurrying the cattle, Mr. Miller fired and brought down the foremost Indian. This stopped the others for a moment, and Mr. Miller had with him a big brindle bull-dog, which at once leaped on the dead Indian and began worrying the body. As the other Indians ran up the dog fought with them till he was killed, but he had created sufficient diversion to allow time for the cattle to be penned and the gate fastened securely. Inside the cabin the two men made ready for a siege, for the Indians were approaching in large numbers, so sure and confident of success that they did not hurry. Had they rushed the attack it is more than likely that they would have met with success, for with only two muzzle loading rifles, the defenders would have been at serious disadvantage, but with the overwhelming numbers the Indians had decided to capture the white men alive, and they made their advance in a leisurely manner unusual in savage warfare. They did not try to kill the cattle—it being always their preference to drive off the stock for use as desired. Inside the cabin the two men watched, with loaded rifles,—passing from point to point they would remove a bit of chinking from between the logs, fire, and then hastily replacing the block be away in another part of the room as soon as possible,—for whenever a puff of smoke came from a chink, that spot was immediately made a target for Indian fire. The white men wasted very few shots, both were

expert with the rifle and Miller particularly so. He kept cool and fought calmly; the young man was excited and often during the first half hour made some mistakes in loading, by one of which mistakes a bullet was caught half way down the barrel of his rifle. He could neither draw it out nor ram it home, and the rifle was rendered useless. The fight now devolved upon Miller, who continued to pick off the Indians as they crawled along the log corral in their efforts to get nearer the cabin. The unarmed man was stationed with the axe to fell any savage who might succeed in rushing the door. Slowly the battle progressed until Miller had just one shot left in his rifle. In those days no man spent his last shot; it was always saved for himself, for the methods of torture practiced by the Indians of the plains were tame when compared with those of the Apache tribes of the southwest. All this time the chief of the Indians had lain close against the log cabin, just in the place where the corral joined it, directing the movements of his men while in safety himself. He lay close to the ground, hugged against the logs. There was no point within the cabin from which he could be reached. Miller and his companion discussed the matter, and decided to risk their last bullet in an effort to get this man, for once he was killed or wounded they knew the fight would be over, for the time at least, since the loss of their leader always threw these Indians into a panic. They did not know the exact location of the chief outside, and Miller decided to reconnoitre. He crawled under his bunk, built at the back of the room, cautiously removed a bit of chink-

ing, and poked his rifle through. The end of the gun was caught by the Indian, but Miller wrenched it away from him and sprang up. As he did so, he displaced the bed clothes and accidentally put his hand on an old horse pistol loaded with buckshot which he had forgotten. This gave him one more chance—one more shot. He also remembered what in the fight he had forgotten,—a small square hole like a window near the head of his bed, which was closed with a board which could be removed at will. With much caution he opened the hole and peeped out—the chief lay directly below him, watching the hole in the chinking through which the rifle had just been pulled. His broad breast was exposed as he cramped his body to see better. Silently Miller lifted the pistol and poked it through the hole—then he fired, and the Indian sprang up and backward twenty feet before he fell—his breast torn in a dozen places.

“The Indians rushed to him wildly, yelling and bearing him among them, stampeded up the hill. As they ran old man Miller flung open the door and, with a yell of triumph, sent his last bullet after them and brought down an Indian. Late that evening the mail carrier passed the place and stopped to water his mules. By him Miller sent in word of the fight to the troops at Fort Whipple, and a note to Mr. Wells telling him to come and get his cattle.

“Mr. Wells went out the next morning and found the two men packing up their belongings ready to leave. Miller said that he had fought Indians since boyhood, all over the United States from Kentucky to Washington, and this

was his closest call; that he was an old man and had had enough of fighting. Although the Indians had carried off all their dead, the ground all along the outside of the corral was as bloody as a slaughter pen, 'exactly like a barnyard in hog-killing time.' The cattle were brought into Prescott, and the same night the Indians returned and burned the cabin and corral to the ground.

"This ranch has for many years been occupied by Robert Blair as a cattle ranch, and is still known, to old timers at least, as the 'Burnt Ranch.' "

The date of this fight has been given by some writers as 1864, but as Mr. Wells arrived in the Territory in that year, and as he also owned the cattle which were being herded by old man Miller, it is to be presumed that his statement that the fight occurred in 1865 is correct.

In the "Prescott Journal-Miner" of January 10th, 1911, appears the following:

"William Bentley, mention of whom was made in the 'Journal-Miner' recently, as the nephew of the late E. A. Bentley, who was the editor and proprietor of the Arizona 'Miner' (now the 'Journal-Miner'), in 1865-66, in an interesting reminiscent mood, Saturday, recalled many thrilling events of that far away day in Prescott when life was insecure and it was not known at what moment the cruel Apache would claim another victim. Although he was a mere boy, but sixteen years of age, he remembers the danger attendant upon living in this little hamlet, not to mention such hazardous

undertakings as leaving the settlement, except under a strong escort.

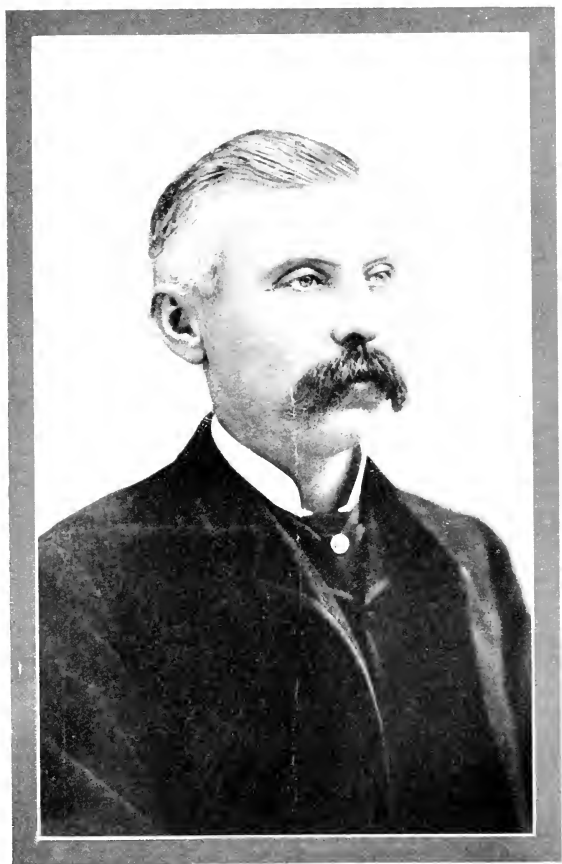
“While his uncle was not classed as a ‘fighting-editor’ nevertheless he was a brave man, as were all in that day on the frontier, and from his intrepidity received a bullet from an Apache, which led to his death later. This was in the spring of 1868, and in that memorable fight, Louis St. James, a resident of Prescott to-day, was one of the participants. In recalling this thrilling event, Mr. St. James yesterday stated that he was with Mr. Bentley, both being en route for the old Bowers’ ranch, in Skull Valley, from Prescott. They traveled on horseback, and took the cut off trail route of that day, which passes over a portion of the present wagon road to Copper Basin. After reaching the latter place, and while going through a long ravine at a low elevation, the party was fired upon. Mr. Bentley, being in front, received the first wound. He was struck in the abdomen and fell from his horse. With nerves of steel and a firm determination to make a brave fight to the end he stood erect and poured several volleys into the redskins. Mr. St. James came up at this critical time and began firing a fusilade of bullets that astounded the Indians. He had a Henry rifle, the first repeating weapon that had been received in the country. The rapidity of the fire, together with the good execution, saved Mr. Bentley and himself from a horrible fate. The Indians took to the brush, with the exception of three killed by Mr. St. James at close range, and while they were ready to descend upon the two with their knives to begin their

frightful work of mutilation. Mr. St. James was also wounded in this battle, receiving a wound in the leg, which would not permit of him advancing except at a slow pace.

"Mr. Bentley, in his pitiable condition, was brought to Prescott that day, a party of travelers fortunately coming along and assisting the wounded men back. Eighteen days later Mr. Bentley passed away as a result of his wounds, and a short time afterward his nephew left the Territory for Oakland, California, and ever since has made his home in California."

Conditions in the southern part of the Territory were as bad as in the north, as the following, from a paper read before the Pioneers' Historical Society at Tucson, by Charles A. Shibell, of whom mention has been made in this history, will show:

"During the year 1867 I was for the first six months at Tubac, and in that time murders by Apaches were of constant occurrence. On March 1st, Ed. Marcy was killed, and our brother pioneer, Oscar Buckalew, lost his leg and ran a narrow chance for his life. The circumstances of this case show out in bold relief that bond that knit us as a band of brothers, and the feeling that exists between us, which to those outside of us is hardly understood. Mr. Buckalew was the mail rider between Tubac and the Patagonia mine, and on approaching the buildings at the mine, that were then in charge of Thomas Yerkes, Richard Dorce, and E. I. Marcy, he was waylaid by the Indians, fired on by them, his horse mortally wounded, and himself shot. The horse had life enough in him to reach the



CHAS. A. SHIBELL.

gate of the corral, where he fell dead, Buckalew with a broken leg being under him. The Indians kept up a constant fire, in the midst of which Thomas Yerkes rushed out from the corral, succeeded in extricating Buckalew and carrying him into the building. His life was saved at the expense of a leg. Richard Dorce was wounded at the same time, from the effects of which he became demented, and wandering off, was never found. In the same year about July, on the old Camp Grant road, Tomlinson, Israel and Irwin were killed. In August, Charles Hadsell, known as Tennessee, and two soldiers were killed on the road near Bowie. About the same time Lieut. C. C. Carrol and John Slater were killed near Bowie.

“During this time murders by the Indians were numerous, and among those killed I recall the following: E. C. Pennington. His son, Green Pennington, on the Sonoita, during the month of July, 1868. Narboe’s cattle, some 660 head, were taken near Picacho, one man killed and two wounded. Although efforts were made to recover these cattle, the Indians succeeded in getting away with them all.”

The following is contributed by A. F. Banta, who has been mentioned in these pages at different times:

“In 1867 the writer had again drifted back to the Zuni villages. Some time in June of the same year Sol Barth and a few Mexicans from the frontier village of Cubero passed Zuni for the Apacheria. The party was well supplied with saddle animals; also pack animals loaded with Indian goods. In due time, and without

mishap, the party reached the Rio Carizo, the home country of the Coyotero Apache. In the olden days, before the subjugation of the Apaches and their confinement upon reservations, the trail from Zuni to Apacheria followed down the valley of the Zuni river until it reached the last black mesa, which bordered the Zuni river on its northern side. At this point the trail left the valley and led across some sandy hills and table lands, striking the Little Colorado river among some sandstone cliffs about twelve miles below the present town of St. Johns. Amongst these rocks was the usual place of meeting for the purpose of trade between the Zuni Indians and the White Mountain Apaches. It was the usual custom of these Apaches to make signal fires on the summit of the mountain by which they indicated the day they could be expected at the 'Rock Crossing' for the purpose above mentioned. Crossing the river at this point, the trail led down the south side to Concho Creek; here the trail forked, the one for the Coyotero country taking a westerly course, and the trail leading to the White Mountain country followed up Concho creek in a southerly direction.

"From time immemorial, or within the writer's knowledge of the past fifty-four years, the Little Colorado river has been the neutral ground for the mutual benefit of the various Indian tribes, and no hostilities ever occurred between them in its immediate vicinity. Nevertheless, it is no bar to scraps (as the writer knows from experience), going to or from the river itself.

“The Barth party remained some days at the rancheria of the Coyoteros, by whom they were hospitably treated, when they decided to visit the White Mountain Apaches, whose country lay some distance southeast from the Carizo. Unfortunately, for the Barth party, the notorious Cochise, with a large band of his picked warriors had arrived at the rancheria of Pedro, the chief of the Sierra Blanca Apaches, a short while prior to the Barth party; and, to make matters worse, Pedro happened to be temporarily absent from the rancheria. Cochise being of a dominating disposition and notoriously cruel and savage, he simply overawed the sub-chief left in charge of the rancheria, and before they realized what was taking place, the members of the Barth party were disarmed, stripped of clothing, and of all their animals and plunder. Pandemonium was rampant for a time, and the naked bunch of terrified captives expected nothing else but instant death. However, the savage Cochise, to give his captives all the mental distress possible, decided to postpone the execution to the following morning. He had decided, after a conference with his warriors, to lash the captives to trees, and have another old fashioned human barbecue. In the meantime the sub-chief had dispatched a swift messenger to meet his chief. The White Mountain chief made all haste to reach his camp. Pedro rushed in, released the captives, and demanded in a loud angry voice: ‘By whose authority is this done in my camp and in my absence?’ The captives stood huddled together, hardly daring

to breathe, listening to the angry conversation—not understanding a word—between Chief Pedro and the bloody-minded Cochise. Pedro told Cochise that, ‘You have violated my hospitality; have violated the hospitality of my camp and my people; have committed outrages enough, and when I want people killed in my camp, I alone will give the order. What I have said, I have said.’ He then turned to the captives and said, ‘Go, go quickly.’ His motion and words were understood, and they hit the trail without any ceremonious farewells. As they passed by some women, one of them handed Sol a pair of cotton drawers. And without food, clothing, or even a match to start a fire, the fugitives had one hundred and twenty-five miles to hoof between the Apache Camp and the Zuni villages, the nearest point where assistance could be obtained.

“It must be remembered that Chief Pedro labored under a great disadvantage; all his women and children were in that camp, and Cochise only had his band of picked men; and in the event of a fight, Cochise had much the best of the situation. Cochise absolutely refused to give up as much as a string of the plunder; but, as a compromise, he allowed Pedro the privilege of disposing of the captives in any manner suitable to him. Cochise suggested that the proper ending of the affair would be an old-fashioned ‘roast and big dance.’ Most of the foregoing facts were obtained from two Mexicans *Cautivos*,—Miguel of the Coyotero Apaches, and Concepcion of the White Mountain Apaches. Miguel gave

his version of the affair in 1869, and Concepcion in 1872.

“The second day of their flight a little Apache dog came to them, which was caught and killed. They carried the dead dog until they fortunately came to some flints, and with these the dog was dressed. The next thing was to make a fire. Taking a small piece of the cotton drawers and pounding it and rubbing it to a fuzzy pulp, and with the flints they struck sparks until one caught the cotton and, with patient blowing, a fire was made. They made a fairly good meal out of the roasted dog without salt, were comparatively happy and laughed at their present predicament. Sol Barth, being the only ‘aristocrat’ in the bunch, being sumptuously and gaily dressed in a pair of cotton drawers, was unanimously dubbed ‘EL REY.’ Before leaving this camp fire, they charred a chunk of wood, and by waving it occasionally, kept it afire for the following night. The third day’s tramp carried the party well up the Zuni river, and having the fire and the remnants of the dog, they were fairly well off, so to speak. However, by this time, their feet were sore, and their bodies badly blistered by the sun.

“The fourth day the fugitives reached the neighborhood of the Zuni villages, where they concealed themselves in a ravine until the ‘King’ could go to the village for some sort of apparel for the party. Mr. Barth came to my place, and after he had filled himself with beans, mutton and shah-kay-way (an Indian substitute for bread), I let him have sheeting enough to dress his companions, and late that evening the whole party came in and were comfortably housed.

The party were exhausted, and lay over for a few days to recuperate. In the meantime I let Mr. Barth have more manta and a full piece of gaiyete (a species of red flannel highly prized by the Indians, and especially by the Navajo). With this he hired animals to ride and bought baustimento (grub) to last the party till they could reach Cubero, New Mexico. The distance from Zuni to Cubero, the nearest town, is about one hundred miles.

"I doubt if Mr. Barth and the Mexicans ever knew they were to be burned, although they had every reason to expect death at the hands of the bloodthirsty Apaches."

Another version of this story, which is authorized by Mr. Barth himself, is as follows:

"One of the most memorable experiences in the adventurous life of Sol Barth occurred in November, 1868. Barth, Magdalena, Calderon, George Clifton, Francisco Tafolla, Jesus and Roman Sanches, and a Mexican named Mazon, who had been an Apache captive, had been trading on the Cibicu with the White Mountain Indians, of which tribe Pedro was the chief. The white men were thence called over, possibly enticed, to trade with a band of Apaches headed by Cochise. The band had but lately come from the south and were hostile. Barth and his party were led about forty miles to a point near the present Fort Apache, by a treacherous Mexican, who effectively delivered them into the hands of their enemies. The Indians had been making tizwin and all were drunk. The traders approaching by a narrow trail, were seized singly by the Indians and stripped of everything includ-

ing clothing. Barth was last, and found his companions standing naked and waiting for death, within a circle of Indians, who were threatening them with clubs that had been charred and hardened by fire. Barth's arms and clothing went the same way as had his companions' belongings. Juana Marta, a Mexican captive of the band, then appeared in the role of Pocahontas. It appeared that she cited some tribal law concerning the taking of captives on the lands of a friendly tribe, and so the case had to be appealed to Pedro, chief of the White Mountains. He was not long in coming, and there was only a short confab after he arrived. He was a decent sort of Indian and well disposed toward the white man, but the best he could do was to save their lives, without any reference to the loot. The conference concluded, the white men were dismissed with a mere wave of the hand.

"It happened that none of them had been robbed of their shoes, a fortunate circumstance, inasmuch as it took four days of travel to reach the nearest point of safety, the Zuni village in northwestern New Mexico. During that time the men's bare skin was scorched by the sun of the days, while they huddled, nearly frozen, around fires at night, for winter was coming on. Barth tells that he stood the trip rather better than the others and kept in the lead. The journey was made on a very light diet, consisting almost entirely of tuna fruit, and an all too scanty share of the carcass of a small dog that had followed them from the Indian camp. On the last day Barth was well ahead, and, at a point

fifteen miles out from Zuni, met an Indian who divided with him a few tortillas. Barth happened to be well acquainted with the Indian, but the recognition was not mutual, for the fugitive, by that time, had little resemblance to the well fed and cheerful freighter who for years had made Zuni a stopping place. Refreshed by the tortillas, Barth then made rapid time into the village, from which he sent runners out with assistance and food. All recovered from their hardships, though Barth suffered a severe attack of 'Chills and fever.' "

CHAPTER XV.

PROGRESS OF THE TERRITORY.

BUILDING BOOM IN TUCSON — LEADING MERCHANTS — INDIAN RAIDS — A. J. DORAN'S EXPERIENCE WITH PAH-UTES — LOYALTY OF INDIANS — BIOGRAPHY OF J. W. SULLIVAN — HIS EARLY EXPERIENCES IN THE TERRITORY — BIOGRAPHY OF JOHN H. MARION.

About this time, 1867-68, S. W. Foreman made the first survey of Tucson, and, according to Fish, soon after this building took a boom. Substantial and convenient houses replaced many of the old hovels. Kirtland built the first road from Tucson to the Santa Rita mountains, and hauled logs into the settlement.

In 1866, according to Hinton, "Handbook of Arizona," p. 266, several mercantile firms brought large stocks of goods to the place. Among the leading firms of the early days were Tully, Ochoa & Company, the senior member of which, P. R. Tully, died in Tucson in the year of 1903. This firm did a very large business. They were followed, after the removal of the capital to Tucson, and, with it, the opportunities of getting fat contracts and legislation suitable to the governed classes, resulting in Tucson having quite a revival, by other firms, among them being that of Lord & Williams. Dr. Lord, the senior member of this firm, was appointed receiver of public moneys in Tucson. W. W. Williams, his partner, was born in New York, came to Arizona

in 1864, and died April 19th, 1907. L. Zeckendorf & Company were also among the leading merchants.

It required a large capital at that time to do business. Supplies came from California and from the Missouri river, compelling the merchants to keep a stock of goods in transit, and a stock of goods in the store. Prior to this time, and, indeed, including this time, the firm of Hooper, Whiting & Company were the leading merchants of the Territory. This firm had wholesale houses at Yuma, and branches at Ehrenberg, Camp McDowell and Maricopa Wells, from which the adjoining territory was supplied. Merchants were constantly harassed by roving bands of Indians, who captured their supply trains, often causing losses running into tens of thousands of dollars.

The outlook for 1868 was not very hopeful, for the Indians on the Colorado and in the Apache strongholds were on the warpath. Fish says that in the winter of 1867-68, there were forty-eight men, settlers, killed in and around Prescott and Walnut Grove.

The Navahos were quiet as far as Arizona was concerned; they made no raids but, occasionally, would steal stock. They, however, made forays into Utah, murdering and driving off stock. Jacob Hamblin, who was the pioneer diplomat of the Mormon Church, and who founded the settlements around Callville and in what was then Pah-Ute County, Arizona, was sent down to arrange a peace with them, which he succeeded in doing.

Major Powell, in his explorations of the Colorado river, in speaking of Hamblin, says: "This man Hamblin speaks their language well, and has a great influence over all the Indians in the regions round about. His talk is so low that they must listen attentively to hear, and they sit around him in deathlike silence. When he finishes a measured sentence, the chief repeats it, and they all give a solemn grunt.

"Mr. Hamblin fell into conversation with one of the men, and held him until the others had left, and then learned more of the particulars of the death of the three men. (Three of Powell's men lost in the first expedition. 'Kapurats,' as Major Powell was called by the Pah-Utes, and his men were allowed by the Pah-Utes to travel unmolested in their country.) They, the three men, came upon the Indian village almost starved, and exhausted with fatigue. They were supplied with food, and put on their way to the settlements. Shortly after they had left, an Indian from the east side of the Colorado arrived at their village, and told them about a number of miners having killed a squaw in a drunken brawl, and no doubt, these were the men. No person had ever come down the canyon; that was impossible; they were trying to hide their guilt. In this way he worked them into a great rage. They followed, surrounded the men in ambush, and filled them full of arrows.

"That night I slept in peace, although these murderers of my men, and their friends, the U-in-ka-rets, were sleeping not five hundred yards away. While we were gone to the canyon, the packtrain and supplies, enough to make an

Indian rich beyond his wildest dreams, were all left in their charge, and were all safe; not even a lump of sugar was pilfered by the children."

I give other evidences of Indian loyalty: Major A. J. Doran, in his memoirs, which will be produced later in these pages, recites a story of himself and companions entering a Pah-Ute camp when they were at war with the whites; joining in their festivities, and then returning to their own camp about a mile away and sleeping in peace all night, and, in the morning, after breaking camp and starting on their way, being passed by these same Indians and meeting with a friendly greeting from them, although, a few hours later the Indians attacked and murdered another party of white men.

As heretofore related, Captain Thos. J. Jeffords went into Cochise's camp; took off his arms, ammunition, etc., and handed them to Cochise, and asked him to take care of them while he remained there a few days. Capt. Jeffords received only hospitality at the hands of the chief and the friendship thus commenced lasted until Cochise's death.

W. H. Hardy, in one of his trips from Hardyville to Prescott, one evening, through mistake, rode into a camp of Wallapais. Finding himself among them, he requested one of the Indians whom he knew, to take care of his horse and give him a place to sleep for the night. Although these Indians were at war at the time with the whites, Hardy only received that courtesy due to a brave man who had placed his life in their hands. The next morning he was permitted to

resume his journey without molestation from the Indians.

With all the prejudices that a pioneer Arizonan may have against the Indians, for, after I came to this Territory in 1879, many of my friends lost their lives in Arizona and Sonora at the hands of the Chiricahuas, yet, in studying the record as I have tried to do, impartially, I find that as much, or even more, treachery can be charged against the whites as against the Indians. General Crook once said that the Indian never violated a treaty, solemnly made; that the white man never kept one. This, perhaps, is overdrawing the matter, but still there is much truth in the remark.

Hon. J. W. Sullivan, is known as one of the most prosperous and opulent business men in the northern part of the State; a man whose cattle graze upon a thousand hills, who is interested in mining, banking and other business pursuits sufficient to occupy the mind of any energetic man, has his headquarters at Prescott and served as a member of the House of Representatives in the Third Legislature of the State of Arizona, the only political position he has ever accepted.

Mr. Sullivan was born in Picton, Prince Edward's County, on the shore of Lake Ontario, in Canada, in the year 1844. He went to Ohio in 1864, finding employment in a lumber camp where, for a time, he was employed in hewing railroad timbers and ties, in charge of an outfit so employed.

From there he went South into Kentucky and Tennessee, and was employed in bridge building

near Nashville, as a carpenter, when the battle of Nashville was fought. After the assassination of President Lincoln, he went into the oil regions of Pennsylvania, taking a contract from the Pennsylvania Railroad for furnishing railroad ties, etc. After a few months he was employed by the Phelps, Dodge Company, who had large lumber interests, as a log scaler, whose duty it was to receive the logs from shippers and scale the measurements for the company. After two years in their employ, in the spring of 1867, he started West, employing his odd time as a carpenter and teamster. In May, 1868, he was sent in charge of seven teams from Fort Union, New Mexico, which was then in process of construction, to Fort Craig and Fort Bowie, to deliver a lot of cavalry horses and Government mules. After his return to Albuquerque, he assisted in moving the Navajo Indians to their present Reservation.

About October, 1868, he met John Clark, who gave him glowing accounts of the mining prospects in Arizona, and organized a party of sixteen, which started for Prescott about the 5th of November, 1868. His life in Arizona and the West, as told by himself, follows:

"At that time there wasn't a white man between Albuquerque and Prescott. We didn't come through Fort Wingate, but came through the Zuni Villages, through Navajo Springs, and struck the old Beale trail, struck this at Navajo Springs, and about the first white man we struck on our trip was old man Banghart, Ed Wells' father-in-law. We finally landed in Prescott; had quite a storm on the road coming out; where

Flagstaff is now, about twelve inches of snow fell; it was the latter part of November when we got into Prescott. I never kept much track of the dates. Old Hance, who has been a guide about the Canyon, says we landed there on the 2nd day of December, 1868, so that is my history of the trip to Arizona in the early days.

“When we organized to come to Arizona there were only four of us had enough to buy riding animals, so we bought ponies for the rest of the fellows as we had to have a large party for protection. We had a character called ‘Dublin’; he was an Irishman and claimed to be a first cousin of the great pugilist, Tom Sayers, an English prizefighter, and this fellow was somewhat on the pugilistic order himself. We christened him ‘Dublin Tricks’ on the road. He afterwards started a saloon. After I got into Prescott provisions were scarce and high. For instance, I had bought a batch of flour in Albuquerque. I traded for it myself, and it was in 100 lb. sacks. When I got into Prescott I sold all my stock excepting a couple of ponies. A pair of mules sold for \$500; they cost me \$40 apiece in Albuquerque. I had four big cavalry horses, and I sold one team for \$400, and the other for \$450; horses and mules were very scarce on account of the Indians raiding the outfits, and getting away with most of their stock, and draft stock was very high. I had a peculiar experience just a few days before I left Fort Union—this reminds me of a deal I got into while we were organizing. One day at our camp outside the post, we heard an auctioneer hollering out, calling for bidders for the extra stuff at the commissary yard. I

stopped in to see what was going on, and they had three great stacks of old rusty bacon, sow belly, and it was in piles of fifty, fifty-five and sixty thousand pounds. It was claimed that in 1864 they had used this bacon for breastworks at Fort Craig. It had been knocked around from one post to another, and was now being sold as condemned army stores. Some of it looked like pretty good bacon, and I thought I knew where I could handle it, trade it off for stuff along the road, and I thought I might load up with a couple of thousand pounds, and trade it off. The first pile offered was the fifty-five thousand pound pile. I bid on it twenty-five dollars for the pile; others bid and I ran it up to fifty-five dollars, and it was knocked down to me for that figure. The other two piles went considerably higher. A couple of days after I got to thinking I had a white elephant on my hands, and a fellow by the name of Collier, who had a station, a Government station to look after the teams, asked me what I would take for that bacon. I said to him that I wanted to take about fifteen or eighteen hundred pounds of it. He looked it over, and said he would make me a bid on it; that he would let me take whatever I wanted of it, fifteen hundred pounds at least, and that he would give me \$125 for the balance. I told him the bacon was his; that I might be able to get more for it, but didn't want to bother with it. The next day I sorted out my bacon and got a pretty good class of bacon. When I got out on the road I used to trade the bacon for fresh mutton, vegetables, and so forth, and I traded some of it at Albuquerque for about six hundred

pounds of flour, flour in 100 lb. sacks, and when we got into Prescott and split up, we disbanded there, Branneman and the Hance boys were with us, I thought of going through to California, expected to clean up and go through; didn't expect to stop here in Arizona, and a fellow by the name of Silverthorn, who was keeping a restaurant where the St. Michaels Hotel now is, came over and asked if we had any flour, and I told him that we had about two sacks, but that I expected to go through to California by way of Ehrenberg, and he said that he would give me sixty dollars a hundred for it; there was no flour in Prescott, only a little cornmeal. They got a little from the soldiers at Whipple, who used to steal it and sell it at sixty cents a pound. Old John G. Campbell ran a store at that time, and he came over to my camp and wanted to know if I had any bacon left. I told him I had about two hundred and fifty pounds, but that I wanted to keep a little of it, twenty to twenty-five pounds, and he went and looked it over and said: 'Take ninety cents a pound for it—for what you can spare?' I had to ask him the second time what he said; it kind of took my breath away. I said yes, so he told me to bring it down to the store, and I did, and sold my rotten bacon at ninety cents a pound; so I cleaned up and sold everything I had except a little saddle pony; I figured on going to California. An old fellow came to me, his name was Johnson; he lived about six miles south of Prescott; he was a blacksmith; he was raised in Baltimore and came to California during the excitement in the gold days, and drifted to Arizona, and he and a man by the name

of Zimmerman had a ranch, they raised potatoes, etc.; had quite a place in the hills at that time, and they had taken a contract to make shingles for the Government, four hundred thousand shingles for Camp Verde. He wanted to know if I and one of the boys who came with us knew anything about making shingles. This fellow with me had been in the lumber woods, but didn't know anything about shingles or shingle making, but I had made them in Canada, my father used to make them and trade them for cattle, etc. I thought the matter over, and thought that I might wait over that winter, and go to California in the spring, so I asked him what wages he was paying. He said he was paying a hundred dollars a month to good hands. I told him that I thought with my knowledge of lumber and working shingles I could earn more than that; that I would not mind taking a contract from him for making shingles, but he said for me to come out for a week or two and let him see what I could do. He had about ten or twelve men burning charcoal for the government too. He was hauling timber to the Sterling Mill, also; had quite a bunch of men around there. So I went down to his camp and took a couple of men out with me to hunt shingle timber. I knew how to select my trees, and I made such headway in three or four days that he had me come in. He had built a camp, with a log cabin fifty feet in length, and he had three or four men working in the camp, working up the timber, and he was paying men a hundred dollars a month and they were averaging about half a thousand shingles a day; they thought that was pretty big

work. The first week I worked in camp I averaged over eight thousand in one week, and the old man offered to pay me a hundred and fifty dollars a month if I would take charge of the camp. We would work until ten o'clock at night by the firelight. So I worked on that shingle proposition until about the first of June the next summer. The old man was quite thrifty and a rustler, and he and his partner had taken a contract, a subcontract, for the cutting of a thousand tons of hay in the Williamson Valley for the Government. There was an excellent crop of wild hay there, blue stem wire grass, red top, and one thing and another of that kind, and they had located about four hundred acres of the land, taking it up as homesteads, etc., to cut hay on it. They were to get eleven dollars a ton, put in shock, so it could be loaded on wagons. George Bowers and C. C. Bean were in together. They were getting thirty-five dollars a ton for that hay at Fort Whipple, and they made a contract with Zimmerman & Johnson to cut this hay at eleven dollars a ton, they to furnish two mowing machines, hayricks, etc. They got after me to go in with them and take a third interest in the cutting of this hay. It was a very dangerous proposition. The Indians were very bad those days, the Wallapais, Tontos and Mohave-Apaches were very bad. They had driven me out of the woods a couple of times the winter before. I remember once fifteen of them came on to where we were one morning just after we started work. We had quite a time getting out of the way. We got back to camp and armed

ourselves. The snow was on the ground and we struck their trail, and they went south on the Hassayamp. We took after them and killed two of them, and the others got away, and once afterwards we came very near getting killed. I knew this was a dangerous proposition, but I went in with them, they were to give me a third interest, and I was supposed to take all the chances and do all the work, which I did. We got out there about the 8th of June that year, and started to cut hay. Zimmerman went out for a few days, but he used to go on a drunk and didn't amount to much. Old man Johnson was kind of feeble and he stopped at the camp to look after the boys. I had two men, one to rake and one to bunch up the hay, and a Frenchman to cook. I ran the mowing machines myself. I had two machines; in case one gave out I had the other ready to keep right on to work. I would get out at daylight in the morning, take one team until ten o'clock, and another team until two, and then work until dark with the first team. We put up about eighteen tons of hay a day. There were Indians on the hills all the time. I used to carry a gun strapped across my breast and two six shooters on me. We were all armed in about the same way, we always kept within hailing distance of each other, and we had a couple of dogs, the best scouts I ever saw. I depended on them more than on anything else. We kept those dogs scouting around and in that way I guess we saved our lives many times that summer. There were eight or ten men killed between Williamson Valley and Prescott at what was called the Divide, that is nine miles from

Williamson Valley. About a month before we got through with our hay contract there were two big freight teams driven by a fellow of the name of Buchanan, which was one of the best outfits that there was there at that time. Buchanan came from Nevada, and some parties said that he had stolen the teams. There was another fellow by the name of Wood, Cap Wood, who came through as a sutler with some cavalry outfit to Fort Whipple during the summer, and he had a team of ten mules. The government had a lot of corn at Camp Wallapai, and was short of corn at Fort Whipple, and these two fellows, Buchanan and Wood, got a contract to haul that corn from Wallapai to Whipple, and they got on the north side of the divide, and the Indians jumped them and got away with two teamsters. Buchanan himself got away and ran to Lee's ranch, about four miles from them, and got some help and went back. When they got back the Indians had got away with all the stock, about twenty-four head of stock. Several parties going back and forth there were killed there.

"I had a little experience myself the first ten days I was at Williamson Valley. We had our headquarters at a little spring at the edge of the valley, about two miles from where the crossing is at the present time. A fellow by the name of Jim Fine had taken up a little ranch at the crossing, and he had a fellow working with him, cutting hay for a livery outfit in Prescott, they were using the old fashioned scythes to cut the hay, and the Indians came up on the ridge above them and fired on them, and killed this fellow who was working for Fine. Fine had

a horse three or four hundred yards below where he was, and he jumped on it barebacked and rushed down to our camp; our camp was about a mile and a half below, and he told us what they had done. We turned out, three men besides myself, and hitched up with all our stock; daren't leave anything there for fear the Indians might get away with it, and went to the place where the fellow had been killed. We put blankets around him and dug a hole about three feet deep and buried him. It was mighty hard to dig; it was in June, hot weather, and after we buried him, Jim pulled out at night and went into Prescott and was away two days. The Indians were watching us, and as soon as he pulled out they knew he would bring a crowd. They had taken this fellow's clothes, leaving him naked, and between the time that Jim pulled out and got back, they had come back, dug up the remains and dragged them down to a little well near the cabin and dumped them in the well. Jim found the trail where they had dragged the body and followed it up to find the grave empty. He came to our camp and stopped all night with us, and told us what had happened, and I sent a man up with him the next day and they filled up the well, threw in some dirt, and covered it up, and dug another well some little distance away. There was a government express ran between Wallapai and Whipple, and the next day after they had dug up this body and thrown it into the well, this bunch of Indians met the express party, caught them on the divide, and killed the soldiers and got away with the mules.

“I had another experience the next summer. I took a contract to make shingles for the Government and contracted for four hundred thousand shingles, part for Camp Wallapai, and part for Camp Date Creek. I had four men in the camp and about once a week I used to go down to town to get supplies. We had been down there about two months and were getting along finely, and one day I started about four o'clock in the afternoon, in March, and had my two six shooters strapped on me. The road to the Ashley Sawmill passed our camp over on Groom Creek, about a quarter of a mile from Granite Creek, and I followed on down the road, which struck west and then north at Granite Creek, and after I struck the old Sterling road on Granite Creek, about three miles and a half from Prescott, I saw some Indian tracks, across the road. In those days we were generally on the lookout anyway, and I saw where the Indians had travelled fifty or a hundred yards along the road and then dodged off, and then crossed back. I got along about half a mile further—a little further down the main road there is a hill, Red Hill, and right below is a canyon across the road, and just as I got to the top of the hill above the canyon, I saw something in the brush about a hundred and fifty yards below me. There was a pine stump there about three feet high, and I dodged behind that stump and kept watch, and in a few moments an Indian dropped down into the road, came off the ridge, and directly came another and another until there was five of them there. The first one that dropped down into the road had on a long buckskin shirt which

looked to be about six feet in length; it looked like a nightshirt. They had seen me coming and got down there to cut me off. They had got on a high point and watched me coming. That was their game. I thought I was in for it, and they blazed away at me. I kept my head very low behind the stump, and I would reach up and get my gun on the top of the stump and shoot, but they were much lower and they soon discovered that I was overshooting them, and they came closer and three of them had those old Henry rifles, and two of them had bows and arrows, and they kept coming closer and closer, and I fired eleven shots at them over the top of that stump, and I was down to my last cartridge, cap and ball cartridge, and I thought I had better break for camp. By cutting across through the brush I could strike my camp much quicker than by going back on the main road to Prescott. Just as I jumped from behind the stump they shot me with an arrow in the neck. I have the scar yet. I grabbed it and broke the wooden part of it off and left the point in there. I had to run across the road, and when I jumped up the pistol, which still had one cartridge in it, fell out of the holster, my right holster, which was loose on the belt. The pistol fell out and dropped in the brush, and if you ever saw a man run, I did. I had on an old fashioned white hat, and they put a bullet through that. Clothing was scarce in those days, and I was wearing a soldier's blouse, and they fired at me from behind, and one of the bullets went right under my arm pit, cutting through the blouse, and I thought I was bleeding like fury from the burn

of that bullet. I was bleeding freely from the wound in my neck. They followed me about three hundred yards and then let up and shouted and hollered like fury. How I did run until I struck three men working for me, about four or five hundred yards from my camp, and I fell right over in a heap, loss of blood and exhausted, of course. My men picked me up and took me to camp; got the arrow head out of my neck, and stopped the bleeding, and while I was not cut very deep, it made quite a wound. On Sunday, a day or two afterwards, a couple of men from the sawmill were going to town, and I went down with them, and when we came to the place where I had had my fight with the Indians, I looked around and found my pistol. The Indians had run right over it and never saw it, and I picked it up as we went down to town two days afterwards.

“That evening that they got me on the run, there was a superintendent named Baker in charge of the old sawmill, the Sterling Sawmill, over on Groom Creek, and he had a magnificent riding horse he brought over from California; he had been away from there for about three months, and after the Indians had given me this chase, they went up the road about three quarters of a mile, and old man Baker, he came along from Prescott, going out to his camp, and they jumped him there, shot his horse; the horse dropped, and the bullet that killed the horse went right through the horse and struck the old man on the ankle, kind of a spent bullet, and he got off and started to run to Johnson’s camp about a mile and a half away. Johnson had an old log cabin there with a dirt floor. The first log

formed a sill across the doorway and you had to step over it to get down in the cabin. Baker rushed to the door, struck that log, and fell over, and didn't come to for three or four hours. Johnson's outfit got back next morning. He told them what had occurred, and they went to the place where the Indians had shot the horse. All they found was the tail and the mane of the horse; everything else was gone.

"In the spring, in February, 1871, I started for California, in fact, I started for Puget Sound, Washington Territory. I had been rustling pretty lively for the Government, cleaning up eight or nine thousand dollars in a couple of years; made thirty-five hundred dollars out of the hay; and the next winter I made four thousand dollars out of the shingles, and in March, 1871, I started for California and for the Sound country. At Wickenburg I fell in with a couple of men who were going to South America. They told a story of a fellow having mines in Peru, and they wanted me to go with them. By the time we got to San Francisco, we went to Los Angeles first and then took a steamer to San Francisco, they talked me into going to South America with them. So we took passage on a sailing vessel to the San Blas country. I made the trip into the mines with these fellows, stopped there about three months, got disgusted, thought it wasn't the place for me as I wasn't a miner, and I got so disgusted that I came back to the coast. Took a roundabout way to get back to the coast; spent about six months travelling around to get back to the coast. Finally got to the Sound country. I went over to New West-

minster, now a suburb of Vancouver, and spent about two weeks over there waiting for an expedition going about three hundred miles up the coast, and while there I met some fellows who had been there the year before and they told me what hardships they had undergone going in and coming out. They told me that there was about two hundred and fifty miles of lakes, etc., to travel over, and everybody had to pack grub, etc., and I gave that up. On my way back I took a steamer to Seattle, at that time a town of about seven hundred inhabitants, and on the steamer I struck an old California miner, and I was inquiring about farming interests and land interests there in the Sound country. I got acquainted with two fellows, and one of them had a big claim, and he wanted to sell out. I went down to look at his property which was about twenty miles from the present town of Bellingham. It was tide country, like Oakland. I finally made a deal for it and spent about nine months filing on it under the old pre-emption law. Lived on it long enough to make final proof. The land was surrounded by a slough, and the water would back up when it was high tide, on the land, and I had to throw up a levee about five feet high; each one of us around there had to do his share. I had about a hundred and seventy rods of levee to build. I went to work and got mine completed, and the others were a little slow, and were not ready to join me, so, after I had made final proof on the property, I thought I would come over to Portland, over into Oregon, so I came over there in the fall of the year, and the old railroad, now the Southern Pacific, was

building at that time, and there was an outfit there, they were putting in pile drivers, and I came up there and took charge of the crew for the winter.

“After I got through there I decided I would go into the cattle business, and I came over to Eastern Oregon, had a young fellow with me, and we went up there looking for a cattle ranch. It was a fine country for that purpose. That was the spring of 1873. I spent about four months there, then came over to the Grand Round, from there to Spokane, and went clean up to the British possessions, travelling around looking for a cattle ranch. We located about twenty-five miles from the Columbia, about sixty miles from the Dells, and then we came back and I bought a bunch of cattle. I didn't expect to stick to them myself very long, but I put this young fellow to work. When I left Arizona I left about two thousand dollars in money uncollected. C. C. Bean owed me about \$1700, and he was to send it to me, but, ‘out of sight, out of mind,’ and the money didn't come, so I left this young fellow in charge of about fifty head of cows with calves, and about a hundred and fifty head of yearling heifers and steers, and I came back to Arizona, and found there was but little show of collecting this money from Bean at this time. Before I left Arizona, however, I had sold Bean the possessory right to some land in Williamson Valley, and he had just got title to it when I got back, so I took a mortgage on the proposition. I knocked around for six months, took a contract for jobbing for the Government, putting up buildings, and remained in

Arizona for about three years before I got things straightened out, and then I went back to Oregon, and drove the cattle I had there over here to Arizona. That was in 1877, and I have been here ever since in the cattle business."

Mr. Sullivan is an old bachelor, and is passing the evening of his days in the State to whose prosperity and advancement he has contributed the best years of his life. He is among those pioneers remaining with us who braved the dangers incident to the early settlement of Arizona, "in the days that tried men's souls," when he carried his rifle on his machine while mowing hay, to protect himself from the incursions of savage foes.

John H. Marion was a man of great force of character; of bulldog tenacity, exceptional ability, and great perseverance. He was born in Louisiana in 1835; came to California in the later fifties, and, being a printer by trade, was employed for some time at Oroville, Butte County, on a weekly paper there. He came to Arizona about the year 1865, being attracted here by the reported rich gold discoveries. He spent a year or two in prospecting; had several brushes with the Indians; finally located in Prescott and became part owner of the Prescott Miner about the year 1866. He continued as its editor for about ten years. When party lines were drawn in the Territory in 1870, he aligned himself with the Democratic party, and was always an able exponent of the principles of Democracy as held by the party to which he gave his allegiance. He was a public spirited man;

nothing calculated to build up Prescott or the Territory ever failed to find in him an advocate. He was a good neighbor; a kind friend, and a bitter enemy. Especially was he devoted to the old timers of whatever creed or nationality, who had shared with him the trials and disappointments incidental to the early settlers of the Territory. He was a great admirer of General Crook, because Crook had subdued the hostile Indians in Arizona, particularly those around Prescott. He was an original character; could write a very humorous article, full of wit and sarcasm, yet had no sense of humor. He was never governed in the selection of words by any dictionary. When he wanted a word he would coin one, and the word itself would explain its meaning.

Personally he was about as homely a man as ever stood upon two legs. In speaking, even in a public address, which, on rare occasions he indulged in, he spoke in a monotone, and his utterances seldom failed to bring down the house because of his originality. In 1883, at a banquet extended to General Crook by the citizens of Prescott, at which many ladies were present, Marion was called upon for a speech. It ran somewhat in this wise:

"We have had many generals here to fight the Injuns, but Crook is the only one who ever succeeded. We had Stoneman; Stoneman was a good fighter, he built a good many roads, and did a good deal of work, but he couldn't fight Injuns. Wilcox had a big reputation as a Civil War soldier, but he couldn't fight Injuns; he had the piles; and so it was with the balance both before


and after Crook came. When Crook come he made the Injuns hunt their holes, and we've had peace in northern Arizona ever since."

When T. L. Bullock undertook to build a road from Ash Fork to Prescott, John Marion was his ardent friend, and supported him in every way possible, not only through the columns of his paper, but also by money contributions, and when the road was completed, he, of course, was among those who had a general jubilation meeting in Prescott, welcoming the arrival of the first train. Among other things Marion said: "I was here when two men right across Granite Creek were killed by Injuns, and when we had to sleep everywhere on our guns, and when it took a lady's stocking full of gold dust to buy a sack of flour, and everything else in the same proportion. They tried to get my scalp, both the Injuns and the white men but, damn 'em, I'm still here." He sold his interest in the Miner about the year 1876, and a few years thereafter started the Prescott "Courier."

He was loyal to his friends, and particularly loyal to his home and his home people. Having lived a great part of his life in Prescott, endured all the trials and hardships of an early pioneer in that locality, he laid aside his party prejudices, being a strict Democrat, and numbered among his friends and associates Republicans who, like himself, were pioneers. It was his custom after closing his office, and when going to his home, to spend an hour every day with Judge Fleury in talking over old times. "Old Grizzly" and Col. H. A. Bigelow, both strict adherents of the opposite party, were his warm

personal friends. When Cleveland was elected in 1884, and Zulick was inaugurated the first Democratic Governor of the Territory in 1885, he gave the influence of his paper to the cordial support of his administration until, in 1889, at the beginning of the session, Zulick signed the bill to remove the Capital to Phoenix. Thereafter the "Courier" could not be numbered as among his political friends. He did not fail in his editorials to criticise in his rough and homely manner the course of the Governor, for with him, in this instance, the duties of a citizen were paramount to party.

John Marion died July 27th, 1891, the records of the Masonic Lodge at Prescott showing that he was, at that time, 56 years of age. His death occurred in the morning. He had gone to the well for a bucket of water, placed the bucket on the porch and fell dead from heart disease. He occupies an unmarked grave in the Masonic cemetery at Prescott. Peace to his ashes.



INDEX.

INDEX.

- ADJUTANT-GENERAL—Appointment of W. T. Flower as criticised by Special Legislative Committee, 23; W. H. Garvin appointed to office, 23.
- AGRICULTURE—Mentioned by Gov. McCormick, 9; mentioned by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 39.
- ALEXANDER, GENERAL—With Major Clendenin, holds conference with Delchayha and Skivitkill, 304 et seq.
- ALLEN, JOHN B.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2; Territorial Treasurer—his estimate of expenses of Territory for year ending Nov. 1, 1869, 49-50; Appointed Territorial Treasurer by Gov. McCormick, Dec. 31, 1867, 57.
- ALLEN, O.—Proprietor of horses stolen by Indians, 220.
- ALSAP, JOHN T.—Only member in Council of Fifth Legislature from Yavapai County, 33; elected President of Council, 34.
- ANDERSON, JOHN—Member of Fifth Legislature, 34.
- ANNEXATION—Fourth Legislature memorializes Congress protesting against annexation of part of Arizona to Nevada, 15.
- APACHE-MOHAVES — With Apache-Yumas and Yavapais, threaten town of La Paz, 308.
- APACHES—Description of by Lieut. Emory and Capt. Johnstone, 226 et seq.
- APACHE-YUMAS—With Apache-Mohaves and Yavapais, threaten town of La Paz, 308.
- ARTESIAN WELL—Fifth Legislature passes resolution requesting Delegate in Congress to solicit premium for first person to sink one on desert, 44.
- ATTORNEY-GENERAL—Special Legislative Committee reports Coles Bashford held office of illegally, 19 et seq.
- AUDITOR, TERRITORIAL—Report of, 14, 15; Report of, 58, 59.
- BACKUS, JUDGE—Decides Third, Fourth and Fifth Legislatures illegal, 98.
- BAKER, CAPTAIN—Leader of prospecting party of which James White was member, 124; killed by Indians, 128.
- BALLARD —.—Gives James White employment after latter's trip through Grand Canyon, 141.
- BANCROFT, H. H.—Includes James White's story in history of western coast, 161.
- BANGHART —.—Father-in-law of E. W. Wells, mention of, 332.
- BARLOW & SANDERSON—Employers of James White after latter's trip through Grand Canyon, 161.
- BARNETT, UNDERWOOD C.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2.
- BARTH, SOL—Adventure with Cochise, description by Banta, and Barth's own story, 319 et seq.
- BASHFORD, COLES—Special Legislative Committee reports held position of Attorney-General illegally, 19 et seq.; as Delegate

- in Congress introduces bill to make Arizona a collection district, 88; speech on appropriation for improvements on Colorado River Indian reservation, 88 et seq.; speech on amendment to postal bill, 96 et seq.
- BEAN, C. C.—Mention of by J. W. Sullivan, 337.
- BEGOLE, AUGUSTUS—With B. F. Thompson, attacked by Indians; Thompson killed and Begole severely wounded, 311.
- BELL, WILLIAM A.—Member of surveying expedition of Kansas Pacific Railway, 102; publishes book "New Tracks in North America," describing experiences of expedition, 102 et seq.
- BENTLEY, E. A.—Editor and proprietor of "Arizona Miner" killed by Indians, 316 et seq.
- BIDWELL, THOMAS J.—Member of Fifth Legislature; elected Speaker of House, 34.
- BIGELOW, COL. H. A.—Mention of, 349.
- BLOCK, BEN—Owner of horse stolen by Indians, 220.
- BOBLETT —.—With Whitcomb and King attacked by Indians; Whitcomb killed and King severely wounded, 309, 310.
- BOUNDARY—Between Arizona and California, mentioned by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 41; Report of Committee on Counties and County Boundaries on boundary between California and Arizona, 50 et seq.
- BOWERS, GEORGE—Killed by Indians, 283, 301, 310; mention of by J. W. Sullivan, 337.
- BOWLES, SAMUEL—Makes mention of James White's trip through Grand Canyon in book, 161, 162.
- BRADLEY, GEO. T.—Member of Maj. Powell's first expedition through Grand Canyon, 180.
- BUCKALEW, OSCAR—Severely wounded by Indians, 318.
- BUILDING—Cost of on military reservations when performed by private contract, 241; booms in Tucson, 327.
- BULLOCK, T. L.—Builds railroad between Prescott and Ash Fork, 349.
- BURNT RANCH—Indian attack upon and defense of by Jake Miller and companion, 311 et seq.
- BUTLER, BENJAMIN F. (of Massachusetts)—Opposes amendment to Appropriation Bill in Congress, for appropriation for Improvements on Colorado River Indian reservation, 92 et seq.
- CABABI MINES—Mentioned by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 38.
- CALABASAS—Mentioned by Genl. John S. Mason in his report, 184.
- CALHOUN, MAJOR—Member of Kansas Pacific Railway Company's surveying expedition, makes notes of and writes account of James White's trip through Grand Canyon, 144.
- CALIFORNIA—Boundary between and Arizona, mentioned by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 41; Report of Legislative Committee on, 50 et seq.
- CALIFORNIA VOLUNTEERS—Mentioned by Genl. John S. Mason in his report, 184.
- CAMPBELL, JOHN G.—Mention of by J. W. Sullivan, 335.
- CAMP GRANT MASSACRE—Mentioned by Thomas Thompson Hunter, 291.

- CAPITAL—Located at Tucson by Fourth Legislature, 28; Congress memorialized by Fifth Legislature for appropriation for Capital Building, 43.
- CARR, LIEUT. CAMILLIO C. C.—Accompanies Capt. George B. Sanford on expedition against Apaches, 196.
- CARROL, LIEUT. C. C.—Army officer stationed at Fort Bowie, 102; killed by Indians, 103 et seq., 319.
- CHAMBERS, SOLOMON W.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2; member of Fifth Legislature, 34.
- CHIMEHUEVIS—With Mohaves, makes treaty with Superintendent Dent, 244.
- CHRISTIE, FOLLETT G.—Elected Chief Clerk of House in Fourth Legislature, 2.
- CLENDENIN, MAJOR—Mentioned by General McDowell, 256; with General Alexander, holds conference with Delchayha and Skivitkill, 304 et seq.
- COCHISE—One of his band has fight with station keeper at Fort Bowie and is killed, 286, 287.
- COLLECTION DISTRICT—Bill introduced in Congress to make Arizona one, but not passed, 88.
- CONGRESS—Memorialized by Fourth Legislature for regiment of volunteers; to increase jurisdiction of Justices of Peace; to allow duties to be paid in currency; protesting against annexation of part of Arizona to Nevada; asking Congress to assume certain indebtedness of Territory; to increase pay of Legislators and officers of Territory, 15 et seq.; passes resolutions asking Congress to make Arizona separate military department; memorialized by Fifth Legislature for authority to military commanders to arm citizens; for extension of time for appropriation of net proceeds of Internal Revenue for building of penitentiary; for Mail Route from Tucson to Sasabi Flat; for appropriation for library; for appropriation to codify laws of Territory; asks for appointment of Surveyor-General for land district of Arizona, 43; resolutions of Fifth Legislature; asking for establishment of mail route from Tucson to Wickenburg; for semi-weekly service from Prescott to Albuquerque, N. M.; recommending establishment of U. S. Depository at Tucson, requesting Delegate in Congress to solicit premium for first person to sink artesian well on desert, 44; Bill to create Collection District for Arizona introduced but not passed, 88; Appropriation for improvements on Colorado River Indian Reservation refused, 88 et seq.; amendment to postal bill favoring Arizona and other Territories, passed, 94 et seq.; passes act legalizing actions of Third, Fourth and Fifth Legislatures, 98.
- CONTRACTORS—Have easy times and make big money when working for Government, 241.
- COOK, EDWARD J.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2; biography of, 31.
- CRADLEBAUGH, LIEUT.—Attacked by Indians while on peace mission, 282, 283.
- CRANDAL, ROBERT M.—Member of Fifth Legislature, 34.
- CRITTENDEN, COL. T. L. afterwards General—Commended by Fourth Legislature, 18; mentioned by Assistant Inspector Gen-

- eral Jones in report, 208; recommendations as to housing of troops in Arizona, 234; succeeds Colonel Lovell in southern Arizona, 298.
- CULLUMBER, ANDREW—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2.
- CUMMINGS —.—Wounded by Indians, 296.
- CUTLER, ROYAL J.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2.
- DANCING—Licensed by Fifth Legislature, 63.
- DARE, JOHN T.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2.
- DAVIS, C. (JEFF.)—Makes attack single handed on band of Indians, 284.
- DAWSON, THOMAS F.—Writes U. S. Senate document on Grand Canyon, dealing fully with James White's trip, 144.
- DE BUSK, S. W.—State Senator in Colorado, vouches for character of James White, 165.
- DELCHAYHA—With Skivitkill, holds conference with General Alexander and Major Clendenin, 304 et seq.
- DELEGATE TO CONGRESS—Reference to his election as, by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 42.
- DELLENBAUGH, F. S.—Brands James White's story of trip through Grand Canyon as "base fabrication," 168, 181.
- DE LONG, SIDNEY R.—Resigns office as Probate Judge, 58; Mention of by Thomas Thompson Hunter, 291, 292.
- DENT, GEO. W.—General Indian Agent for Territory, mention of, 242; interferes with General Gregg's order to consider all Indians off of reservations hostile, 242 et seq.; makes treaty with Mohaves and Chimehuevis, 244.
- DEPOSITARY, U. S.—Fifth Legislature passes resolution recommending establishment of, at Tucson, 44.
- DESERTIONS—General Ord in report mentions desertions of soldiers, 269.
- DEVIN, GENERAL THOMAS E.—Report of expeditions against hostile Indians, 271 et seq.; makes mention of building roads and trails, 276.
- DORAN, MAJ. A. J.—Experience with Pah-Utes, 330.
- DORCE, RICHARD—Severely wounded by Indians, 319.
- DRACHMAN, MOSE—Mention of, 32.
- DRACHMAN, PHILIP—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2; biography of, 31.
- DRACHMAN, SAMUEL ARIZONA—Mention of, 32.
- DUNN, A. G.—Has herd of horses stolen by Indians, 219.
- DUTIES—Fourth Legislature memorializes Congress to allow duties to be paid in currency, 15.
- EDUCATIONAL MATTERS—Mentioned by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 41.
- EHRHART, T. J.—Chairman of Colorado State Highway Commission, furnishes corroboration of James White's trip through Grand Canyon, 163.
- ELIAS, JESUS M.—Member of Fifth Legislature, 34.
- EMORY, LIEUT.—Description of Apaches, 226.
- ERWIN, A. M.—Member elect of Fifth Legislature, killed by Indians, 46, 300.

- EWING, THOMAS—Guide of Capt. Sanford's expedition against Apaches, 196.
- EXPLORATIONS AND SURVEYS—Kansas Pacific surveying expedition, 100 et seq.; story of James White's trip down the Grand Canyon, 122 et seq.; story of Major Powell's first expedition through Grand Canyon, 169 et seq.
- FERRIES—Mentioned by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 41.
- FERRY, JAMES—U. S. quartermaster at Callville, takes care of James White after latter's trip through Grand Canyon, 152.
- FINANCES, TERRITORIAL—Mention of by Gov. McCormick, 14; Report of special committee on condition of Territorial Finances, 19 et seq.
- FINE, JIM—Mention of by J. W. Sullivan, 339.
- FISHER —.—Mail carrier killed by Indians, 288, 289.
- FLEURY, JUDGE—Mention of, 349.
- FLOOD, PRIVATE—One of escort of mail rider Spencer, killed and mutilated by Hualapais, 302 et seq.
- FLOWER, W. T.—Special Legislative Committee criticises appointment of as Adjutant-General, 23.
- FOREMAN, S. W.—Makes first survey of Tucson, 327.
- FORT BOWIE—Description of by Wm. A. Bell, 102; mentioned by General John S. Mason in report, 184; conditions at described by Thomas Thompson Hunter, 285; commander of post killed by Indians, 285, 286; fight at between station keeper and one of Cochise's band, 286 et seq.
- FORT BRECKENRIDGE—Mentioned by Genl. John S. Mason in his report, 188; name changed to Fort Grant, 188.
- FORT BUCHANAN—Mentioned by Genl. John S. Mason in his report, 185.
- FORT GOODWIN—Mentioned by Genl. John S. Mason in report, 184.
- FORT GRANT—Formerly Fort Breckenridge; mention of by Genl. John S. Mason in his report, 188.
- FORT McDOWELL—Mentioned by Genl. John S. Mason in his report, 185; mentioned by Genl. Irvin McDowell in his report, 231.
- FORT MOJAVE—Mentioned by Genl. John S. Mason in his report, 184.
- FORT WHIPPLE—Mentioned by Genl. John S. Mason in report, 184.
- FORT YUMA—Mentioned by Genl. John S. Mason in his report, 184.
- FRENCHMEN, TWO—Fight with Indians down on Hassayampa, 281.
- GAGE, ALMON—Elected Secretary of Council of Fourth Legislature, 2.
- GARVIN, W. H.—Appointed Adjutant-General, 23.
- GASS, OCTAVIUS D.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 1; elected President of Council, 2; represents Mohave and Pah-Ute Counties in Fifth Legislature, 33.

- GIBBINS, ANDREW S.—Member of Fifth Legislature, 34.
- GIBSON, J. P.—With Joseph Melvin attacked by Indians and severely wounded, 308, 309.
- GILES, JAMES S.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2.
- GONZALES —.—Murdered by Indians, 280.
- GOODFELLOW —.—Name of fourth member of prospecting party of which James White was a member, 154; shot in foot and left behind, 155.
- GOODWIN, FRANCIS H.—Member of Fifth Legislature, 34.
- GOODWIN, GOVERNOR JOHN N.—Accompanies Genl. John S. Mason on tour of Territory, 186; makes arrangements to raise two companies of Pima and Maricopa Indians; one company of Mexicans at Tucson and one at Tubac, 186.
- GOVERNOR—Message of R. C. McCormick to Fourth Legislature, 2 et seq.; Message of R. C. McCormick to Fifth Legislature, 34; McCormick takes seat in Congress as Delegate, 99; arrival of A. P. K. Safford, 99.
- GRAND CANYON—First known passage of by James White, 122 et seq.; story of Major Powell's first expedition through Grand Canyon, 169 et seq.; distances traversed by Maj. Powell, 180, 181; mention of second expedition of Maj. Powell, 181.
- GRANT, JAMES—Report of as Territorial Auditor, 14, 15; resigns office, 57.
- GREGG, GENERAL—Commended by Fourth Legislature, 18; with Genl. Palmer in experience with Apaches, 111 et seq.; issues order that all Indians found off reservations be treated as hostiles, 242; order interfered with by Superintendent of Indian Affairs Dent, 242 et seq.; order countermanded by General McDowell, 246; succeeds Col. Wallen in northern Arizona, 298; commands expedition against hostiles, 299.
- GUNTER, JULIUS—Governor of Colorado, vouches for character of James White, 165.
- HADSELL, CHARLES—Murdered by Indians, 319.
- HALL, ANDREW—Member of Maj. Powell's first expedition through Grand Canyon, 180.
- HALLECK, MAJOR-GENERAL H. W.—Report, 203 et seq.; report on Military Conditions in Arizona in 1868, 261 et seq.; declares Arizona military district, 298.
- HAMBLIN, JACOB—Diplomat of Mormon Church makes peace with Navahoes, 328; description of by Maj. Powell, 329.
- HANCE —.—Mention of by J. W. Sullivan, 333.
- HANFORD, G. W.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2; did not attend session, 2.
- HARDY, W. H.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 1; corroborates statements of Charles McAllister in reference to James White, 141; his experience with hostile Wallapais, 330.
- HAVASUPAIS.—Treatment of James White in Grand Canyon, 159, 182.
- HAWKINS, W. RHODES—Member of Maj. Powell's first expedition through Grand Canyon, 180.
- HENION, JOHN—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2; did not attend session, 2.

HIGHWAYS AND STREETS—Act passed by Fifth Legislature in reference to, 64.

HINTON, JIM—Employer of James White after latter's trip through Grand Canyon, 160.

HODGES, FRANCIS M.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2.

HOOVER, JOSEPH H.—Member of Fifth Legislature from Yuma County—did not attend session, 33.

HOOVER, WHITING & CO.—Leading merchants of Territory, 328. HUALAPAI, see Wallapais.

HUBBARD, LIEUT.—Army officer stationed at Fort Bowie, 102.

HUNTER, THOMAS THOMPSON—Describes attitude of Indians in 1867 and 1868, 285 et seq.

ILGES, COLONEL—Mentioned by Assistant Inspector General Roger Jones in report, 208.

INDEBTEDNESS—Fourth Legislature memorializes Congress asking that certain indebtedness of Territory be assumed by Federal Government, 15 et seq.

INDIAN RESERVATIONS—Need of mentioned by Gov. McCormick, 7; one only in Arizona, 7; appropriation for improvements on Colorado River Indian reservation refused by Congress, 88 et seq.

INDIANS—Hostile mentioned by Governor McCormick in his message, 2; mentions need of reservations, 7; hostiles again referred to by Governor McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 34; mention of in general, 36; sale of liquor to, mentioned by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 41; report of committee of Fifth Legislature, 47 et seq.; kill Lieut. Carrol and mail carrier, 103 et seq.; attack Genl. W. J. Palmer in command of Kansas Pacific Railway Company's surveying expedition, 109 et seq.; treatment of James White by Havasupais, 159, 182; friendly and hostile tribes mentioned by Genl. John S. Mason in his report, 183 et seq.; mentioned in report of Assistant Inspector General Jones, 206 et seq.; also in reply of General McDowell to report of Assistant Inspector General Jones, 215 et seq.; expeditions against described by General McDowell, 219 et seq.; steal horses belonging to A. G. Dunn, O. Allen, Sheriff Rourke, Ben Block, and Governor McCormick, 219, 220; Yavapais mentioned by Lieut.-Col. Price as most hostile of Indians, 222; also Wallapais, 222; Description of Apaches by Lieut. Emory and Capt. Johnstone, 226 et seq.; River Indians on warpath, 241, 242; General Gregg issues order that all Indians found off reservations be treated as hostiles, 242; order interfered with by Superintendent of Indian Affairs Geo. W. Dent, 242 et seq.; Superintendent Dent makes treaty with Mohaves and Chimehuevis, 244; General McDowell countermands General Gregg's order, 246; report of General Thomas E. Devin of expeditions against hostiles, 271 et seq.; murders, raids, etc.; names of persons murdered, wounded, or robbed by, 279 et seq.; Colonel Price takes warpath against Wallapais, 294; article in San Francisco "Call" on, 294 et seq.; Indian question still unsolved, 297 et seq.; continue raids and massacres, 298 et seq.; attack on S. C.

- Miller's ranch, 300; Apache-Yumas, Apache-Mohaves and Yavapai threaten town of La Paz, 308; murders, raids and attacks by, 308 et seq.; attack on Burnt Ranch, 311 et seq.; kill forty-eight settlers in and around Prescott and Walnut Grove, 328; murder three of Maj. J. W. Powell's men who left him on first trip through Grand Canyon, 329; Major Powell sleeps in safety among murderers, 329; Major A. J. Doran's experience with Pah-Utes, 330; Capt. Thos. J. Jefford's experience with Cochise, 330; W. H. Hardy's experience with Wallapais, 330.
- IRRIGATION—Mentioned by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 40, 41.
- IRWIN ———.—Murdered by Indians, 319.
- ISRAEL ———.—Murdered by Indians, 319.
- JACKSON, ORICK—In "White Conquest," gives number of whites killed by Indians, 284.
- JACOBS, B. M.—Enrolling Clerk of Council, Fifth Legislature, 34.
- JACOBS, L. M.—Engrossing clerk of Council, Fifth Legislature, 34.
- JAMES, GEO. WHARTON—In "In and Around Grand Canyon" makes statement that James White worked for Major Powell; statement denied by White, 166.
- JAY, LE ROY—Murdered by Indians, 280.
- JEFFORDS, CAPT. THOS. J.—His experience with Cochise, 330.
- JEFFRIES, ELI—Cashier of First Natl. Bank of Trinidad, Colorado, vouches for character of James White, 165, 166.
- JENKINS, HENRY—Member of Fourth Legislature, 1; member of Fifth Legislature, 33; death of, 45.
- JOHNSTONE, CAPT.—Description of Apaches, 227.
- JONES, COL. ROGER—Assistant Inspector General—Makes report on Military Operations and Conditions in Arizona in 1866-67; makes recommendations as to disposition of troops and location of posts; makes mention of dangers from Indians; mentions inconvenience and discomforts suffered by soldiers, 206 et seq.; recommendation that department commander for Arizona be appointed, finally followed out, 235.
- JUSTICES OF PEACE—Fourth Legislature memorializes Congress to increase jurisdiction of, 15.
- KANSAS PACIFIC RAILWAY COMPANY—Organizes surveying expedition across Arizona for route for southern Railway, 100 et seq.
- KELLOGG, S. B.—Furnishes corroboration of James White's trip through Grand Canyon, 163.
- KING, WILLIAM—With Whitcomb and Boblett attacked by Indians; Whitcomb killed and King severely wounded, 309, 310.
- KIRKLAND ———.—Builds first road from Tucson to Santa Rita Mountains, 327.
- LAMBERTSON, T.—Attacked and wounded by Indians, 279, 280.
- LAND DISTRICT—Fifth Legislature asks Congress for appointment of Surveyor-General for, 43.
- LA PAZ—Threatened by Apache-Yumas, Apache-Mohaves and Yavapai, 308.

LAWSON, LIEUT.—Member of Kansas Pacific Railway Company's surveying expedition, 102.

LEGAL—Mention of courts by Gov. McCormick, 12; Congress memorialized by Fifth Congress for appropriation to codify laws, 43; Judge Backus decides Third, Fourth and Fifth Legislatures illegal, 98; mention of scarcity of courts by Genl. McDowell, 233.

LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY—Fourth Session convened at Prescott, 1; memorializes Congress for regiment of volunteer troops; to increase jurisdiction of Justices of Peace; to allow duties to be paid in currency; protesting against annexation of part of Arizona to Nevada; asking Congress to assume certain indebtedness of Territory, and to increase pay of members and officers of Legislature, 15 et seq.; passes resolutions that request be made that Arizona be made into separate Military Department; of commendation for Generals Gregg and Crittenden and Colonels Lovell, Sanford and Price, 17 et seq.; report of select committee on financial condition of Territory, 19 et seq.; defeats act to create Maricopa County, 26; convening of Fifth, 33; memorializes Congress for appropriation for capital building at Tucson, 43; memorializes Congress for authority to military commanders to arm citizens, 43; memorializes Congress for extension of time for appropriation of net proceeds of Internal Revenue for building of penitentiary, 43; memorializes Congress for Mail Route from Tucson to Sasabi Flat, 43; memorializes Congress for appropriation for Library, 43; memorializes Congress for appropriation to codify laws of Territory, 43; asks Congress for appointment of Surveyor-General for land district of Arizona, 43; Fifth Legislature passes resolution requesting Arizona's Delegate in Congress to ask for establishment of mail route from Tucson to Wickenburg and for semi-weekly service from Prescott to Albuquerque, N. M., 44; resolution recommending establishment of U. S. Depository at Tucson, 44; joint resolution in nature of appropriation bill, 44; resolution asking Delegate in Congress to solicit premium for first person to sink artesian well on desert, 44; resolution of commendation of Governor McCormick, 45; Death of Henry Jenkins, member, 45; A. M. Erwin, member elect, killed by Indians, 46; report of committee on Military and Indian Affairs, 47 et seq.; estimate of expenses of Territory for year ending November 1, 1869, 49, 50; Report of Committee on Counties and County Boundaries on boundary between California and Arizona, 50 et seq.; Gov. McCormick's appointments submitted to Council, 57; Acts passed by Fifth Legislature: Dancing licensed; public highways and streets; establishment of public schools; locating Territorial Prison at or near town of Phoenix, 63 et seq.; Judge Backus decides Third, Fourth and Fifth Legislatures illegal, 98; Congress legalizes actions of these Legislatures, 98; in 1871, held in Tucson, 99.

LENNON, JOSEPH C.—With Geo. D. Bowers and party attacked by Indians, Bowers killed, 310, 311.

LEWIS, CHARLES W.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2.

- LEWIS, NATHANIEL S.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2.
- LIBRARY—Fifth Legislature memorializes Congress for appropriation for Library, 43.
- LINDSEY, OLIVER—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2; elected Speaker of House, 2; member of Fifth Legislature, 34.
- LIQUOR, SALE OF TO INDIANS—Mentioned by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 41.
- LORD, CHARLES H.—Appointed Territorial Auditor July 1, 1868; by Gov. McCormick, 57.
- LORD, DR.—Member of firm of Lord & Williams, appointed receiver of public moneys in Tucson, 327.
- LORD & WILLIAMS—Leading firm in Tucson, 327.
- LOUNT, DANIEL S.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 1.
- LOVELL, COL. CHAS. S.—Commended by Fourth Legislature, 18; succeeds Genl. Mason in southern Arizona, 298; is succeeded by Genl. Crittenden, 298.
- McALLISTER, CHARLES—One of party who rescued James White; his description of White's condition, 141.
- McCORMICK, GOV. R. C.—Message to Fourth Legislature, 2 et seq.; Message to Fifth Legislature, 34 et seq.; makes reference to his election as Delegate to Congress in message to Fifth Legislature, 42; resolution of commendation of by Fifth Legislature, 45; takes seat in Congress as Delegate, 99; owner of horse stolen by Indians, 220; severely criticises Genl. McDowell for countermanding General Gregg's order that all Indians found off reservation be treated as hostiles, 250.
- McCRACKEN, JACKSON—With Lieut. Cradlebaugh, attacked by Indians, 283.
- McDOWELL, GENL. IRVIN—Report on conditions in Territory; speaks in high commendation of Arizona Volunteers, 190 et seq.; criticised by Assistant Inspector General Jones for military conditions in Arizona, 207 et seq.; replies to report of Assistant Inspector General Jones, 215 et seq.; reports on expeditions against Indians, 219 et seq.; mentions Colonel McGarry as celebrated Indian fighter, 223; issues special orders No. 39, with reference to location of troops in Arizona, 236 et seq.; countermands General Gregg's order that all Indians found off reservations be treated as hostiles, 246; severely criticised by Governor McCormick, 250; second annual report, 250 et seq.; makes special mention of Lieut. Col. Sanford, 253; Capt. J. W. Williams wounded in expedition against hostile Indians, 255; makes visit to Arizona; not well liked by people of Arizona, 298; succeeded by Genl. Ord, 302.
- McGARRY, COLONEL—Mentioned as celebrated Indian fighter by General McDowell, 223.
- McKEY, ALEXANDER—Member of Fourth Legislature, 1; member of Fifth Legislature, 33.
- MAIL CARRIER—Killed by Indians, 103 et seq.; Hualapais severely wound mail rider Chas. Spencer, and murder and mutilate escorts, 302 et seq.
- MAIL ROUTE—Fifth Legislature memorializes Congress for establishment of Mail Route from Tucson to Sasabi Flat, 43; passes

- resolution requesting Delegate in Congress to ask for mail route from Tucson to Wickenburg, and for semi-weekly service from Prescott to Albuquerque, N. M., 44.
- MAIL SERVICE—Mentioned by Gov. McCormick, 10; poor service mentioned by Genl. McDowell, 233.
- MANNING —.—Wounded by Indians, 296.
- MARCY, ED—Killed by Indians, 318.
- MARICOPA COUNTY—Act introduced into Fourth Legislature to create, defeated, 26.
- MARION, JOHN H.—Biography of, 347 et seq.; Death of, 350.
- MASON, GENERAL JOHN S.—Report on Arizona for 1865-66, 183 et seq.; succeeded by Col. H. D. Wallen and Col. Chas. S. Lovell, 298.
- MATHEWS, JOHN H.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2.
- MELVIN, JOSEPH—With J. P. Gibson attacked by Indians, 308, 309.
- MILLER, JAKE—With companion defends Burnt Ranch against Indian attack and kills chief, 311 et seq.
- MILLER, S. C.—Indians attack ranch of, brave defense by Mrs. Miller, 300.
- MILITARY—Governor McCormick calls attention to insufficient forces in Arizona, and urges separate department for Territory, 2, 3; Fourth Legislature passes resolution that request be made for separate department, 18; Fourth Legislature passes resolution of commendation for Generals Gregg and Crittenden, and Colonels Sanford and Price, 18, 19; Fifth Legislature memorializes Congress to give authority to commanders of posts to arm citizens, 43; report of committee of Fifth Legislature, 47 et seq.; Report of General John S. Mason, makes trip over District, accompanied by Governor Goodwin; mentions friendly and hostile Indians; mentions arrival of Colonel Wright with troops; recommends that two or three companies of native Arizona troops be raised, 183 et seq.; Report of General Irvin McDowell; speaks in high commendation of Arizona Volunteers, 191 et seq.; report of expedition against Apaches by Captain George B. Sanford, 196 et seq.; Report of Major-General Halleck, 203 et seq.; Report of Colonel Roger Jones, Assistant Inspector General, criticising military operations in Arizona, 206 et seq.; General McDowell's reply to report of Assistant Inspector General Jones, 215 et seq.; expeditions against Indians described by General McDowell, 219 et seq.; Special Orders No. 39, with reference to location of troops in Arizona, 236 et seq.; General Gregg issues order that all Indians found off reservations be treated as hostiles, 242; General McDowell countermands General Gregg's order, 246; General McDowell's second report, 250, et seq.; Major-General H. W. Halleck's report, 261 et seq.; General Ord's report, 269 et seq.; desertions of soldiers mentioned by General Ord, 269 et seq.; report of General Thomas E. Devin of expeditions against hostile Indians, 271 et seq.; General Mason succeeded by Colonels Wallen and Lovell, 298; Colonels Wallen and Lovell, succeeded by Generals Gregg and Crittenden, 298; Arizona declared military district by Genl. Halleck, 298; General McDowell suc-

- ceeded by General Ord, 302; Genl. Alexander and Major Clendenin hold conference with Delchayha and Skivitkill at Camp O'Connell, 304 et seq.
- MINES AND MINING—Mentioned by Gov. McCormick, 8; mention of by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 37 et seq.
- MOHAVE RESERVATION—Indians on, go on warpath, 241, 242.
- MOHAVES—With Chimehuevis, make treaty with Superintendent Dent, 244.
- NAVAHOES—Peace made with by Jacob Hamblin, 328.
- OCHOA, ESTEVAN—Member of Council of Fifth Legislature from Pima County, 33.
- ORD, GENERAL C. C.—Report on conditions in Arizona in 1868, 269 et seq.; succeeds General McDowell and announces his Indian policy, 302.
- OURY, W. S.—Mention of in connection with Camp Grant massacre, 291.
- OWEN, JOHN—Member of Fifth Legislature, 34.
- PAH-UTES—Mentioned by Governor McCormick as hostiles, 2.
- PALMER, GENL. W. J.—Succeeds Genl. W. W. Wright in charge of Kansas Pacific Railway Company's surveying expedition, 101; experiences with Apaches in chasm in Mogollons, 109 et seq.
- PARRY, DR.—Geologist of Kansas Pacific Railway Company's surveying expedition; his conclusions as to the hydrography of the Colorado river, 141 et seq.; wrote account of White's trip through Grand Canyon, 144.
- PAY OF LEGISLATORS AND OFFICERS OF TERRITORY—Fourth Legislature memorializes Congress for increase in pay of, 17.
- PENITENTIARY—Fifth Legislature memorializes Congress for extension of time of net proceeds of Internal Revenue for building of, 43.
- PENNINGTON, E. C.—Murdered by Indians, 319.
- PENNINGTON, GREEN—Murdered by Indians, 319.
- PLATT, MORTIMER R.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 1.
- POLLOCK, MRS. THOMAS—Furnishes corroboration of James White's trip through Grand Canyon, 163.
- POSTAL BILL—Amendment to favoring Arizona and other Territories passed, 94 et seq.
- POWELL, CAPT. W. H.—Member of Maj. Powell's first expedition through Grand Canyon, 180.
- POWELL, MAJOR J. W.—Expedition through Grand Canyon referred to by "Rocky Mountain Herald," 145; story of first expedition through Grand Canyon, 169 et seq.; distances traversed by, 180, 181; mention of second expedition, 181; describes Jacob Hamblin, 329; mentions death of three men who left him on first trip through Grand Canyon, 329; sleeps in safety among murderers, 329.

- PRICE, LIEUTENANT-COLONEL—Commended by Fourth Legislature, 18; Commands Expedition Against Indians, 222; mentions Yavapais as most hostile tribe, 222; also Wallapais, 222; mentioned by Genl. McDowell, 256; takes warpath against Wallapais, 294.
- PRISON, TERRITORIAL—Act passed by Fifth Legislature establishing same at or near Phoenix, 87.
- PURDY, LIEUTENANT—Commands expedition against Indians, 219.
- RAILROADS AND TELEGRAPHS—Mentioned in Governor McCormick's message to Fifth Legislature, 35.
- RICHARDSON, ALBERT D.—Makes mention of James White's trip through Grand Canyon in "Beyond the Mississippi," 162.
- RICHARDSON, MARVIN M.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2.
- ROADS AND TRAILS—Mention of by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 42; General Devin mentions building of, 276; first road from Tucson to Santa Rita mountains built by Kirkland, 327.
- ROCKY MOUNTAIN HERALD—Publishes account of James White's trip through Grand Canyon, 145; refers to Major Powell's expedition, 145.
- ROURKE, SHERIFF—Owner of horse stolen by Indians, 220.
- RUSH, JOHN A.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 2; biography of, 31.
- ST. JAMES, LOUIS—With E. A. Bentley when Bentley was murdered by Indians, 316 et seq.
- SAFFORD, A. P. K.—Governor, arrives in Territory, 99.
- SALPOINTE, BISHOP A. B.—Chaplain of Council, Fifth Legislature, 34.
- SANFORD, COLONEL GEORGE B.—Commended by Fourth Legislature, 18; report of expedition against Apaches, mentions Lieut. Camillio C. C. Carr, Mr. Max Strobel, Mr. Thomas Ewing, 196 et seq.; mentioned by General McDowell in second report, 253.
- SAN FRANCISCO "CALL"—Editorial showing feeling towards Indians, 294.
- SAXTON, W. M.—Killed by Indians, 296.
- SCHOOLS—Mentioned by Gov. McCormick, 11; Act passed by Fourth Legislature empowering Supervisors to establish School Districts, 29 et seq.; Act passed by Fifth Legislature establishing, 64 et seq.
- SHIBELL, CHAS. A.—In paper read to Pioneers Historical Society gives list of murders and outrages by Indians, 318, 319.
- SIMMONS, JOHN W.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 1.
- SKIVITKILL—With Delchayha, holds conference with General Alexander and Major Clendenin, 304 et seq.
- SKULL VALLEY—Many murders by Indians in, 300; Lieut. Hut-ton in command of small force in, 300.

- SLATER, JOHN—Murdered by Indians, 319.
- SMITH, JOHN—Member of Fifth Legislature, afterwards known as John Y. T. Smith, 34.
- SMITH, W. A.—Known as "Shot Gun Smith"; memorable fight against Indians, 289, 290.
- SOCIAL LIFE—Mention of by Gov. McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 42.
- SPENCER, CHARLES—Mail carrier attacked by Hualapais, severely wounded, and escort murdered and mutilated, 302 et seq.
- STEVENS, HIRAM S.—Member of Fifth Legislature, 34.
- STEPHENS, LEWIS A.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 1; Indians attack home of during absence attending Legislature; brave defense by Mrs. Stephens, 293, 294.
- STICKNEY, DANIEL H.—Member of Fourth Legislature, 1; member of Fifth Legislature, 33.
- STONE, COL.—Killed by Indians near Fort Bowie, 286.
- STROBEL, MAX—Civilian who accompanied Capt. George B. Sanford on expedition against Apaches, 196 et seq.
- STROLE, HENRY—Member of prospecting party led by Capt. Baker of which James White was also member, 125; drowned in waters of Colorado river in Grand Canyon, 133.
- SULLIVAN, HON. J. W.—Biography of, 331 et seq.
- SUMNER, JOHN C.—Member of Maj. Powell's first expedition through Grand Canyon, 180.
- SURVEYOR-GENERAL—Fifth Legislature asks Congress for appointment of for Arizona, 43.
- TAYLOR, D. L.—Mayor of Trinidad, Colorado, vouches for character of James White, 165.
- TELEGRAPHS—See Railroads.
- TERRITORIAL PRISON—Gov. McCormick mentions Congressional appropriation for, and recommends selection of site, 13.
- THAYER, JOHN S.—Appointed Probate Judge, July 20, 1868, by Gov. McCormick, 58.
- THOMPSON, B. F.—With Augustus Begole, attacked by Indians, Thompson killed and Begole severely wounded, 311.
- TOMLINSON ——.Murdered by Indians, 319.
- TOOLE, JAMES H.—Appointed Adjutant-General September 7, 1868, by Gov. McCormick, 58.
- TRADE RATS—Mention of, 241.
- TRAILS—See Roads and Trails.
- TREASURER, TERRITORIAL—Estimate of expense of running Territory for year ending Nov. 1, 1869, 49, 50; Report of, 59 et seq.
- TREHAN, WILLIAM—Murdered by Indians, 280.
- TROY, CORPORAL—One of escort of mail rider Spencer, killed and mutilated by Hualapais, 302 et seq.
- TUBAC—Mentioned by Genl. John S. Mason in report, 184; deserted on account of hostile Indians, 187.

TUCSON—Capital located at by Fourth Legislature, 28; mentioned by General John S. Mason as a village, 183; building boom in, 327; first survey of by S. W. Foreman, 327; large stocks of goods brought into by several firms, 327.

TULLY, OCHOA & CO.—Leading firm in Tucson, 327.

TULLY, P. R.—Death of, 327.

TWADDLE, HARVEY—Murdered by Indians, 280.

U. S. DISTRICT ATTORNEY—Mention by Gov. McCormick of office being vacant, 13.

U. S. MARSHAL—Mention by Gov. McCormick of office being vacant, 13.

VOLUNTEERS—Governor McCormick urges raising of regiment, 4; General John S. Mason recommends raising of two or three companies, 190.

VULTURE MINE—Mentioned by Governor McCormick in message to Fifth Legislature, 37.

WALLAPAI—Mentioned by Governor McCormick as hostiles, 2; Mentioned by Lieut.-Col. Price as among most dangerous Indians, 222; Colonel Price takes warpath against, 294; severely wound mail rider Spencer and kill and mutilate escort, 302 et seq.

WALLEN, COL. H. D.—Succeeds Genl. Mason in northern Arizona, 298; is succeeded by Genl. Gregg, 298.

WEAPONS, DEADLY—Improper use of forbidden by Act of Fourth Legislature, 26 et seq.

WELLS, JUDGE E. W.—Description of Indian attack on Burnt Ranch, 311 et seq.

WHITCOMB, JOSIAH—With William King and Boblett, attacked by Indians; Whitcomb killed and King severely wounded, 309, 310.

WHITE, JAMES—First person known to make passage of Grand Canyon of Colorado, 122 et seq.; leaves Fort Dodge on Arkansas River with three companions on prospecting expedition, 124; attacked by Indians in canyon of Grand River, Captain Baker killed, 128; White and one companion, Strole, build raft and begin journey, 129; White's companion drowned, 133; White's experience with Havasupai Indians, 139; arrives at Callville and is rescued by Mormons, 140; story of trip made official U. S. Senate document, 144; story of trip written by Major Calhoun, member of Kansas Pacific Railway Company's surveying expedition, 144; account of trip published in "Rocky Mountain Herald," 145; said to have been rescued by Capt. Wilburn of barge Colorado, 152; still living at Trinidad, Colorado; his own story, 153 et seq.; denies statement made by Geo. Wharton James that he worked for Maj. Powell, 166.

WICKENBURG—Vicinity of, scene of many Indian raids and murders, 281, 282.

WILBURN, CAPTAIN—Master of barge Colorado, said to have rescued James White, 152.

- WILLIAMS, CAPT. J. W.—Mentioned by Genl. McDowell as having been wounded in Indian fight, 255.
- WILLIAMS, W. W.—Member of firm of Lord & Williams; biography of, 327, 328.
- WINDOM, WM. (of Minnesota)—Introduces amendment to Appropriation Bill in Congress, for appropriation for Improvements on Colorado River Indian reservation, 88.
- WRIGHT, GENL. W. W.—In charge of surveying expedition of Kansas Pacific Railway, 100.
- YAVAPAI—Mentioned by Governor McCormick as hostiles, 2; With Apache-Yumas and Apache-Mohaves, threaten town of La Paz, 308.
- YERKES, THOMAS—Mention of, 318.
- ZULICK, HON. C. MEYER—Mention of, 350.



